

ROAD TO KINGDOM

– Oukoku e Tsuzuku Michi –

- Volume 5 -

AUTHOR:

Ofuro Ashitsubo

ARTIST:

Hikage Eiji

[Translated by: Light Novels Translations]

CHAPTER 56

THE NIGHT OF THE BALL

In our journey to bring back Mel and her daughters, we didn't stop by any villages or towns and took the shortest distance, which is probably why there weren't any brigands or thieves of the sort. Those guys also open up shop in remote places where there aren't many people.

We finished our journey with nothing eventful but something might happen from now on.



"Welcome back!... you've brought back more again?"

It doesn't look like Nonna or Celia is going to investigate them. It feels like every time I go out on a journey I'm increasing the amount of women. I must be a bit more prudent or else the mansion will be overcrowded with women.

"We are just about running out of rooms. Even though it's the ability of a man to surround himself with women, there is a limit."

While Nonna was mumbling I introduce them, Mel also didn't expect for me to be surrounded with women but was full of smiles as she greeted everyone politely.

It seems Kuu is shocked at the impact of different women appearing left and right. Ruu doesn't really know what's going on, she's probably thinking that there are a bunch of family members around.

I was slightly worried but Mel and Nonna unexpectedly opened up to each other quickly.

"When I heard you were acquaintances with our pervert, I wondered what kind of suspicious person you were, but I'm relieved that you are such a refined and calm person."

“No, no, I should be saying that to you Nonna-san, you’re doing pretty well at that young age.”

Wow, she has already broken past Nonna, one of the two great barriers of our house. It may be that the two of them are similar in personality. They have deeply rooted elegance, but they also have a slight malicious side.

“You also have three daughters, don’t you?”

Nonna gently touches Sue, who was being held by Ruu, as if she was something fragile. She was smiling while squeezing her hand.

“Yes, Kuu and Ruu are the children from my previous marriage, Aegir-san told me he would look after all of us.”

“I see, since he really is a man of high caliber, huh?”

Nonna seems to have sensed something wrong with the words ‘Kuu and Ruu are the children from my previous marriage’, but she realized the truth faster than she could ask the question.

“Come here Sue, this child was previously the seed given to me by Aegir-san. Look, this is your father’s family.”

Sue is going ‘daa, daa’ and gripping her hand but Nonna seems to be frozen in place. Should I get out of here before she erupts?

There was a crash, the sound of pottery breaking. Avoiding to show her face, Celia who was drinking tea in the corridor seems to have dropped her cup. She immediately opened the door with a bang and came in. My path of retreat is blocked.

“A- a father!? Aegir-sama got you pregnant!? Why is it before all of us-!?”

“I slept with Mel before meeting you guys.”

Maria and Melissa were also surprised but they weren’t making such a pathetic face. Especially Melissa is engrossed with the children. She has her finger grabbed and her face relaxed. Irijina just gave a greeting since she is training her body, Rita is also out buying food for the welcoming meal.

“How come you didn’t use contraceptives!? Even as it is you would spray it everywhere over there!!”

“You could make a village from just the children of Aegir-sama!”

I understand Nonna and Celia’s eyes that are questioning me quite well.

“Hey wait! Why do you have to be mandating what Aegir-san and my mom are doing? We knew him way before you did!”

Celia and Kuu glare at each other. Kuu is acting on her emotions and lashing out, but being stared back caused her knees to tremble. Celia has cut down many people on the battlefield after all, she has a different kind of bloodlust. Don’t put your left hand on your hip though, although today it’s fine since she’s unarmed...

“Don’t argue and emit such bloodthirstiness.”

“Ouch!”

I hit Celia with a knock on the head. Her murderous intent disappears, Kuu lets out a ‘hmph’ to pretend to be strong and sits on the sofa but she lets out a long sigh of relief.

“Carla! You were with them at the time weren’t you!? Well... didn’t you have a way of doing things? You probably only had talent to wet yourself outdoors!”

“Well that is... I guess... wait what do you mean outdoors, we do it indoors as well!”

Carla looks at me to confirm but I signaled for her to keep quiet. It would look uncool if I were to give an excuse as to why I didn’t use contraception.

“Nonna, I thought it was fine if something like that happened, that’s why I embraced Mel, and I’m also happy that Sue was born. So that’s why, don’t say so much about it, ‘kay?”

“Uuu! I’m sorry... it’s not like I hate the children or Mel-san. I was just frustrated that she had children first, if I made her feel unpleasant then I’ll apologize.”

Nonna and Celia are dejected, for the smaller one I’ll pet her head and for the one with large breasts, I’ll leave it to Carla. Carla tries to comfort by stroking her, but Nonna

shakes her hand away and declares.

“However, there is definitely nothing better than having a boy be the successor! I’ll show you that the successor of the Hardlett family will be birthed by this womb!”

“Ufu, try your best.”

Sue was taken away by Melissa so Ruu came over beside me. Celia again threatens her but I stretch her cheeks.

“Ouwei! It huurths!”

“Pu-!”

When Ruu laughs, Celia glares sharply at her, and Ruu got frightened.

“Why are you always so severe?”

“It huurths! You’re pulling them too faar!”

It is literally the seed I sowed, but somehow I was able to peacefully get them to accept Mel and the others.

I have relations with eight of the women in the house, in the near future I plan on taking Kuu so it would be nine people... It’s getting to the point that I can’t just have fun with everyone.

Erich also told me that if I don’t decide on a wife soon, they’ll dispute with each other. When eventually children are born and become successors, it will become a huge fuss with the status. Erich might have had something happen to himself as he turned dark while talking to me. I believe he mentioned that he was originally born from a noble family.

I’ll make a decision after moving to the territory, I’ll put off the problem for now.



...And more fuel to cause the problem that I postponed to recur has been dropped.

“That Erich, doing something unnecessary...”

He didn’t use a mailman, but he purposely sent a messenger to bring a letter to everyone at their house. Hurriedly I cut open the letter to see what it was about, it seems that it was an announcement for a ball.

Separate from the party sponsored by the royal family commemorating our victory in the war, it seems to be a party that Erich’s Radhalde family is sponsoring. New nobles are certain, but it seems that people from traditional nobles to their friends are invited too.

When you become one of the counts then you have to do things like this, seems dreadful. I was taking it easy but when I looked at the date, I was taken aback.

“Isn’t it tonight?!”

The messenger looked apologetic and handed another letter to me.

The previous one was the official invitation, probably this was something different than what was sent to everyone else, and what was written in this informal letter...

‘I thought I should tell you directly but I forgot. Although you probably don’t plan to attend the other parties anyways. On the invitation it is written that you are allowed to have one female guest accompanying you, so don’t bring five or six with you.’

And that was what was written. You know me quite well don’t you.

It was rare for the master of the house to talk with the messenger in front of the entrance. Everyone in the house peeked to see what was going on, so I showed them the invitation.

“A ball? A dancing one?” “Is it something like a festival?” “A noble’s ball is something stricter I’m sure.”

Carla, Maria, Melissa all talk boisterously but they don’t really know much. I also

actually don't know much about it. Previously I was obligated to go to a banquet hosted by the king and was placed at the lowest seat, the only thing I remember was that I drank too much alcohol and drank the water from the pond in the castle.

"At least Erich has written that he would allow me to bring a woman with me..."

Everyone looks at me wanting to be chosen. But first off Carla is out of the question. She's a good woman, but she's not really the type of woman you want to introduce to people. It would go well if it was Celia but I will get the stigma of being a person who prefers little girls.

I've thought about it till now but I've got my answer. Nonna's gaze was different than the other women and it was like she was heading out to the battlefield, filled with bloodlust. Maria and Irijina who were standing next to her distanced themselves a little.

"...Nonna, can I count on you?"

"Of course! Please leave it to me!"

For the first time since I was born, I thought that a woman's gaze is frightening.



The luxurious dress that was previously bought for Nonna, continuously criticized as the 'unused dress of the drawer' and 'the symbol of waste', is now finally getting a chance to see the sun's rays.

Nonna's body wrapped in the dress combined with her natural beauty is the literally like that of a flower in full bloom. Even comparing just her face, Nonna is the most beautiful among the women in the house. And above all, the arousing breasts that seem to pop out and destroy her dress, if a man doesn't turn back to look then it would be wise to protect my own butt.

"How does it look?"

"Beautiful..."

My voice comes out unintentionally. Nonna giggles as she gathers everyone to show off.

A woman's fashion attracts men's attention while at the same time intimidating other women. I feel like I've heard those words somewhere.



Before I knew it, Nonna got on the carriage that I ordered, and we arrive at Erich's house... it seems after receiving the title of Count he's bought quite the gorgeous mansion.

When I escorted Nonna to enter the mansion, the eyes of all the participants instantly gather around us. Half of them are captivated by the beauty of Nonna, the other half were on me, the new noble following Erich and Number 2 of the important persons, a celebrity with multiple achievements on the battlefield that the king personally praised, and a mysterious character who didn't show up to banquets or parties they have been hearing about from Erich.

"Viscount Hardlett, it's rare for you to take part in a ball!"

The one who spoke up was Bruno. We shake hands and bump shoulders. To nobles it was a vulgar greeting but he's an acquaintance since my mercenary days, I'm not concerned.

"Anything change on your side?"

"I was a rear guard in that war, I didn't get to accomplish much but I received the rank of Baron because of his Highness's compassion. Of course I don't have any territory."

My sleeves are lightly pulled. She wants me to introduce her I guess. Although I believe that you and Bruno have met before.

"So this is Nonna. She's living with me..."

Should I say that she's my lover? If I say something like this in this place then I feel like Nonna would lose her standing.

"This is a pleasure seeing you for the first time. I am grateful for the generous favor gifted to me by Hardlett-sama, taking me along with him to a place such as this. I am delighted to make your acquaintance..."

With grace, she spreads her skirt and bows once, so that's how you say it.

"You are... I see. You're quite famous in a lot of ways."

I would like to hear those details, they're probably good-for-nothing rumors though. If I say that she was a former slave, Nonna would naturally be ashamed, but I will also be shamed. I'll just pretend not to know.

Once Bruno and I finished greeting each other, the other nobles start coming towards us one after the other. I was on guard that they were all targeting Nonna but surprisingly they all came to talk to me.

"I have been granted the title of Baron~ as I was saying." "Pleased to make your acquaintance from now on." "I have heard you are quite famous."

I relied on Nonna's help to not be rude, while trying to deal with it as to not look servile. After a while of tiring greetings and introductions, finally the organizer shows his face.

"Viscount Hardlett. You did well to come on such sudden invitation. Please enjoy yourself this evening."

As if I can enjoy myself! He knows that I think it's annoying and yet he's saying that with a smile.

Erich pretends to be diplomatic as he comes close to my ear.

"What are you thinking of doing carrying a sword while pulling a woman along?"
"Am I a barbarian?!"

Actually I brought a normal sword but it was taken from me at the entrance.

"Is that woman over there your lover? Or perhaps a wife?"

"I do not have social status, but I was specially had favor bestowed on me."

Nonna responds normally to the whispering gossip. Don't look down on her sharp ears. I want to assert that she's a lover, but the first one amongst all of them.

“Is- is that so... it might be preferable if you take such a beautiful lady as your wife though, don’t underestimate the ambitions of the nobles. Since you’re a person who holds Viscount status and also getting special treatment from his Majesty. If you don’t take your legal wife with you to the ball then they will come to you in crowds.”

The new nobles are what they call a group of upstarts. For better or for worse there is no connections with blood relatives.

At least there is the political faction centered around Erich, however he’s not connected by blood so the cooperation is weak. Therefore it is normal to get a promising person into your own faction, or to marry into a family and benefit from the career advancement, in which the traditional nobles here are mostly aiming for.

“You are Viscount Hardlett, aren’t you? I am called Wogroh...”

This middle-aged man seems to be a Baron but I haven’t seen or heard of him before.

“Being able to meet you today is some kind of fate, this over here is my daughter...”

His daughter is dressed up fancily, smiling to the best of her ability. Her body’s plumpness is to my liking but her good looks are several levels below Nonna. If you remove the makeup then the difference will widen even further. Even so I will welcome you if you want to come into bed.

After that, nobles came one after the other introducing their daughters and sisters. Among them, what was terrible was

“This girl was born out of adulterous relations and has no place within our house, if you would like, I can leave her by lord Hardlett’s side where you can teach her manners through apprenticeship. Naturally, I will agree to also let you teach her relations between man and woman...”

What appeared was a child that didn’t look matured enough to be 10 years old. Don’t think that I will eat up everything and anything that looks like a woman.

It was exactly as Erich said when the nobles came swarming, but I warded them off, declined them politely, and somehow was able to pull through.



"I'm tired... this is really tiring."

It was briefly over and I was drinking tea with Nonna in a lounge with few people.

"Ufufu, thanks for your hard work. So what do you think? Socializing is also like a battlefield right?"

This is a battlefield for nobles, huh?

"Aah... it would be easier for me to just grab a spear and run onto the battlefield."

"Please take this."

Nonna gave me a piece of paper with something written on it.

"They are the names, statuses, positions, facial features, and the people they brought along of those that you have met with today. If you remember it then it will surely be useful in the future."

"I appreciate it. Honestly I don't really remember many of them."

Nonna giggles.

"I thought so. Also, this mark represents the people who took a peek at my breasts and those who were talking bad of us behind our backs. If they are not important people, please give them a cold reception."

I want to laugh with Nonna, but I sigh as my expression darkens.

"I am glad that I am able to help Aegir-sama.... But I still feel ashamed. When the daughters and sisters were being introduced my heart was beating quickly. If this person was to become a legal wife then what would happen to me?"

I hug Nonna, bringing her to my chest. A small amount of people around us send their gazes this way but I pay no attention to it. I am declaring that she is my woman.

"I pretend to be elegant, polite, but in the end I'm still a woman from slavery. Out of

everyone here I'm the most vulgar woman..."

The trembling Nonna looked much smaller than usual.

"I will not make light of you. I promised not to tell anyone right? And you are also the most beautiful out of everyone here."

"I believe you. But I'm afraid, I'm just a lover, the worry that I have of being thrown away someday won't disappear."

I kiss her gently but Nonna doesn't stop trembling.

"What should I do to ease your anxiety?"

"I want a child... actually when I saw Mel-san's children, it felt like my heart was going crazy. That person certainly has a bond with you, but so do I!"

This was just a gift from heaven. I put in some effort but I wasn't sure about the result.

"Effort huh... well, we can do it tonight. But is there anything else that would calm your heart?"

Nonna raises her head up and looks at me with upturned eyes. From the corner of her eyes there are some tears forming.

"I want to officially be your wife... please. It will only be a formality to Aegir-sama at most and you will probably be made fun of, but I will live amongst that. I trust in your love, but without the name as a wife, without the formality, I can't help but feel uneasy."

She buries her face in my chest even stronger. The paper she handed me earlier, she is able to recall how a person looks like after seeing them. She wrote it for my sake with earnestness. Every time they asked me, she had to endure the humiliation of having my reply be 'she's a lover'.

The one who told Nonna, who has given up everything as a slave, that she would be saved was me. Her body, her heart, her soul, her everything. If I can help this woman, whose body is trembling with unease, by making her my wife, then I shall do just that.

For a second, the image of Lucy crossed my mind, but she probably wouldn't care

about such things. Whether I welcome her with a wife, or if I surround myself with many women, I'll trust that she would laugh and mock me about it.

"I have said an impertinent thing... please forget about it."

I guess she took my silence as a rejection, but as Nonna was about to separate her body from mine, I pull her back in and hug her.

"If your anxiety will disappear then it's a simple task. We can deal with the details later. Today, starting now you will be my wife."

Nonna instantly raises her face. There are no more tears in her eyes.

"Is that alright with you!?"

"Yeah, I won't go back on it."

"Really... I'm so happy... it's unbelievable..."

Nonna hides her face with her hand placed against her nose and mouth. If I made you that happy then I might use up my good fortune of being born a male.



The lady attendant serving as the waiter for the Radhalde family was astonished at the sudden proposal that started. Originally there was already nothing left to do in the lounge, but since it was something that can't be missed and she wasn't needed at the moment, she poured tea for herself and camped in the corner of the lounge.

And at the end of the moving scene, the man and the woman hug each other, the woman cries tears of joy while hiding her face and crumbling to the floor. Just like the happy ending at the end of a romance play, the lady attendant's face turned red. However, the woman held the man's shoulder and went to fix her makeup, and after a while of closing her mouth and doing it she was picked up and I realized.

Is it possible that she was covering her mouth for this reason?! The lady attendant from a commoner's birth realized how frightening a noble woman can be and sent shivers down her spine.



Nonna, who went to the toilet to fix her makeup, did not weep her eyes out, it was to re-enter with her beautiful appearance, and stand beside me so she can enjoy the ball with vigor.

Different from the time up until now, there was a bright aura drifting around her entire body and I could see her charm several times more, even as the man being her partner, my eyes were captivated unknowingly.

“Nonna is quite skilled.”

“For a noble, manners and dancing is required.”

She escorts me properly since my dancing is uncoordinated. If it was another woman then I might have stepped on their feet and toppled them over.

“I’m your wife after all, I will do my best to make my husband look good.”

If I dance with Nonna those enormous breasts will hit me no matter what.

“Please don’t get big. You’ll have to wait until the pledge tonight♪”

We gather stares in the area and dance with our hands connected. I thought she was just like a fairy.

The banquet is over, there are those still talking friendly with each other, there are also those who are scattering and returning home, and Erich once again comes to talk to me.

“Today’s dance was excellent... that woman, does she have experience at balls?”

“Well? She’s a former slave who I saved from attacking bandits.”

Nonna’s origin is a secret known only by the family members. Even if it’s Erich I can’t say anything.

“Well that’s fine. So have you listened to the sales pitches from the nobles? Are there any ladies that you’re interested in?”

If I was married then I would also have relations with a political faction so he wants a single word.

“Oh that, if it’s a woman to be my wife then I’ve decided.”

I pull Nonna over.

Erich was surprised slightly but soon seems to consent.

“That’s right, speaking from a noble’s point of view, taking a lover of commoner’s birth to be your wife is extremely outside their common sense, but you don’t let such things affect you...”

Erich bows once to Nonna. It is unthinkable for a person with Count status to bow to a commoner. I guess he recognizes her as the wife of a Viscount.

As if Nonna understands that, she returns the bow, then she covers her face and holds her mouth. Is she feeling happy again? This is happening quite a lot, isn’t it.

After Erich and I talked for a bit, the both of us emptied our glasses and left each other.

“Once we leave the socializing place, it will become a storm of invitations. Prepare yourself.”

“I will try my best for my husband.”

How depressing, before I could get out what I had to say, Nonna beat me to the punch. She got on the carriage and was thoroughly acting spoiled, so much so that even the driver let out a sigh.

It was late at night when we returned home, it was about time for the day to change over to the next day. Everyone aside from Celia and Sebastian have already retired to bed.

“Welcome back Master.”

“It’s gotten late.”

“Welcome back.”

Celia’s still awake, will she fine getting up early in the morning to train with her sword?

“How was the ball?... Nonna-san what are you smiling about?”

“I will tell you when everyone is here.”

Was Nonna actually smiling? Celia is quite sensitive to these things but does she get it wrong sometimes?

“Well, that’s how it is. I’m sorry for keeping you waiting but tonight is special. I’ll ask Nonna to keep watch at night so you can take a rest.”

I give Celia a kiss.

“No, well I wasn’t going to do that, it’s natural for me to wait for my master’s return-!”

I know it is something that is anticipating but as expected tonight will be the night where the two of us, Nonna and I, plan to love each other.

“It’s the special day for a woman... we have preparations so please leave us late.”

Nonna heads to the bath with her usual smile.

“Nonna-san? Why is she smiling so much?”

Again? Isn’t Celia acting strange today?

“Ufufu, Celia-chan. Good night.”

Celia stares at her with scornful eyes as Nonna hastily runs off. Celia’s face doesn’t seem to be in agreement with what is going on but I’ll pet her head to distract her.



As it gets later into the evening, because of the tea that she drank before going to bed, Miti gets up to go to the toilet.

“Hmm. I wonder if Master and Nonna-san has come back already. If something happens then I feel like I’ll get scolded again...”

Swaying my way towards the toilet half-asleep, but I realized that Nonna’s room had a light burning.

“Doing it... at a time like this? But I shouldn’t peek, since I’ll get caught.”

But from inside the room, you could hear a voice that was somewhat different from a flirtatious voice. The thoughts of ‘I shouldn’t do it’ ran through my mind, but before I knew it my ear was up against the door.

“Yay–! I did it! I did it!! At last I did it!!! It’s like a dream! I can’t believe it! Aah, I’m speechless!”

With a shush, as her voice is likely to be overheard, she covers her mouth shut. She isn’t speechless at all.

“I won! I have won! I am thankful to the goddess of love! With this Aegir-sama is my man! I have claimed him for myself!!”

It’s not your usual strange voice. The creaking sound is coming from the bed. She seems to be bouncing up and down on the bed. Maybe she’s gone crazy.

“All that’s left is a child! Once I get a child I’ll be his number one!! Aah, I want to get pregnant! Are there eggs properly in my womb? I’ll get his seed to flow into me right now. So make sure that you accept them.”

I frighteningly back off and bring my ear away from the room. I lost the urge to pee. Eventually Master comes and enters Nonna’s room. I put my ear to the door again but it’s just the usual, the moaning from sexual intercourse and the sound of flesh slapping against flesh.

They are going at it quite intensely but for some reason I am relieved that it went back to the usual noises. Although what was that earlier... maybe it was some auditory hallucination from being half-asleep. Let’s just sleep tonight.

The next day, the small fact that Miti wet the bed at 15 years old disappeared in the presence of an important announcement that shocked the entire house.

Protagonist: Aegir Hardlett 20 years old Winter

(Traditional age reckoning)

Status: Goldonia Kingdom Viscount Eastern Independent Army Commander

Feudal Lord of Arkland Southeast Area

Assets: 860 gold (silver and below not counted)

Weapons: Dual Crater (large sword) , Jeweled spear (temporary)

Equipment: Black Cloak (Cursed)

Family: Nonna (wife), Melissa, Maria, Carla, Rita,

Mel and her 3 daughters (Sue: biological child)

Servants: Sebastian, Miti, Alma, Kroll, Nina

Subordinates: Celia (adjutant), Irijina, Leopolt (army commander),

Schwartz (horse), Adolph (domestic affairs official)

Sexual Partners: 39, persons who got pregnant: 6

CHAPTER 57

FAMILY TROUBLE

There are no plans for today so naturally, everyone in the house is staying inside.

The morning sun is rising steadily and at this moment, the family members would be enjoying tea and talking amongst themselves in the living room or veranda after having breakfast. The servants should be working diligently on washing, laundry and cleaning. It wouldn't be uncommon for Celia and Irijina to train their bodies in the garden so their senses don't get dull.

But today is different, everyone is gathered in the living room. The servants have also stopped working, even Leopolt who normally doesn't intimately talk much with the household members was called over.

"Ahem. Today I have something to tell everyone, so I have gathered you here."

Nonna, who ordered everyone to gather, is standing in the middle.

"What the heck is this~?"

"Aren't those clothes for a party?"

"Pr-pretty."

Nonna is wearing the dress from yesterday's party. Her appearance is beautiful as if she was a goddess, but since she's wearing it inside the house, it looks extremely unnatural. Even so, Kuu, Ruu and Kroll were fascinated with their jaws dropped and mouths opened.

"Aegir-sama, please be my escort."

"Hm? What is this?"

Nonna linked her arms with me and pressed her breasts against me. They feel comfortable so there is no reason to resist.

“At yesterday’s ball, many nobles introduced their female relatives to Aegir-sama.”

The women murmur, having other women approach the man they love is not a pleasant feeling.

“However, Aegir-sama didn’t care about any of those women.”

I can hear them breathe a sigh of relief. The preface is long though.

“However, it was hard for me who was beside him... the high class ladies introducing themselves one after the other! Compared to me, I was just a lover! I could almost see their looks of scorn as they introduced themselves!”

Maria and Mel nod sympathetically in response. Although I don’t think there was anyone that blunt...

“There were only those who were staring at my breasts with their indecent eyes, and those whores who were trying to curry favor, looking down on us with disdain!”

“Isn’t that because of your humongous tits?”

“What vulgar fellows! I won’t forgive them!”

“...”

Carla teases Nonna, and Irijina got seriously angry. But the most frightening was Mel, as if she remembered something, she didn’t blink at all.

“My heart was hurt, even standing was tough, but Aegir-sama hugged me gently, saving me with his inquisitive eyes.”

“As expected of Aegir-san.”

“Amazing!”

The sisters Kuu and Ruu give an applause. But wait a minute, wasn’t I tired and resting in the lounge? She’s walking normally... and the way she’s telling the story is just like a bard.

“And this is what he said to me, who was crying from humiliation and anxiety.”

“ “ “ ” “ “
... ”

Everyone held their breaths and waited for the continuation. Melissa is the closest to the front. Unexpectedly, she likes these kinds of stories. Only Celia is looking on at a distance with half-open eyes and a doubtful look.

“Marry me... be my wife!”

“Aah no way! Awesome!”

“A man doesn’t go back on his word. If that is what you want... how is that!”

“To have their beloved propose to them, there is no woman who would refuse! From now on, I will be your wife!!”

As she acts out the two roles, with the raging last scene, Nonna adjusts her breathing.

Somehow it feels a little different, I don’t remember the exact words, but the meaning is quite wrong. She’d lose spirit if I interrupt her when she’s so eagerly telling the story, so I won’t say anything.

“That night, Aegir-sama and I made love to each other as husband and wife. While being hugged by his sturdy arm, I was desperately pleading to him! I want a child. I want the child of my beloved husband!”

The three girls Alma, Kuu, and Ruu gulped and swallowed their saliva. I can’t see the appearance of the other virgin, Miti. I thought I saw her carrying around a futon quite restlessly earlier...

“With intense movements, the man and woman climb towards the peak of pleasure! Then both of their love reaches the climax and then! Aegir-sama said this while laying face up and breathing roughly... I’ll love you forever...”

“ “ “Kyaa!!” “ “

The group of three virgins blush and hide their faces. That’s strange, from my memory it should have been Nonna who was on top and working hard.

“Aegir-sama and I collapsed on the bed, and the flower in the vase fell down to the floor with a plop. The end!”

There was a resounding applause for Nonna, who sat down to catch her breath; it was a fine performance she portrayed as the narrator as well as the other roles. Regardless of whether it was true or not, it was a rather nice romantic drama. Idolizing grown-up love, the 16 and 17 year old girls will probably believe it. But to those who are actually affected...

“Don’t screw with me!!”

“I don’t understand why you didn’t ask Aegir-sama!”

“I-if you get married to Nonna then what will happen to me!?”

Everyone’s eyes turn to me. Nonna grips tightly. It seems she’s shaking a little bit too.

“There are quite a few parts which were made up but... the general idea isn’t wrong. I intend to make Nonna my wife.”

“Huuuuuuh!!?”

“What will happen to me!? You’re going to discard me after just taking my purity!?”

“Get my mom pregnant! Why do you have to be with the other girls!”

“Kuu, it’s fine, as long as I have this child...”

“I see... Nonna-san is it...?”

“ ”

Carla, Irijina, Kuu, Maria shouted. Melissa and Rita wasn’t thinking of becoming a wife from the beginning, so they congratulate Nonna.

The one most devastated might be Celia. Once I admitted it, she fell down. Her consciousness is barely there, but she is in a state of shock.

I call the relief squad, Ruu and Alma come running, and for now they took her to her own room to sleep in her bed.

Well, it will be my turn from here on; the women’s hearts are in a dangerous state. First will be Maria, whose face is dark.

“Maria...”

“Eheh, I’m alright. It’s just a little shock. Thinking about it, I only followed Aegir-san because I admired you... I’m not like the other girls who got saved by you, or love you

to death. It's natural that I would lose."

When she starts talking about these things, there's nothing better than giving her a hug.

"Aau, eheh. Doing that still makes me so happy... but I already can't stay here right? I'll pay you back all the money you've given to me when you return to Roleil..."

"I won't change. I'll continue to love you, and I also intend on loving the other girls too."

"Eeh! I'll feel bad for Nonna-san. Even though she got married, you're doing it with other girls..."

When I wanted to kiss Maria, she refused. I move her hands out of the way and forcefully steal her lips.

"It's not like if you're not my wife, I can't love you. Also, if I can't embrace anyone except Nonna alone... then she'll break."

"We-well that's true."

It's common sense to the girls that if I have only one partner then she won't be able to wake up until the afternoon of the next day. And if this was everyday, then after a month it might become a funeral.

"You don't want to stay with me?"

"I don't know... I just don't know... I don't know my own feelings."

Maria is confused. If I encourage her poorly then I might not get a good result.

"Then, let's do this, when we move, you will stay here in this mansion together with Melissa. Then if your feelings for me don't disappear then, whenever you want, come over to my territory. If they don't, you can go back to Roreil whenever you want. If there is anything you need, just tell me."

Maria is listening to me in silence.

“If your feelings do not disappear even when we are separated, that means your heart already belongs to me. No matter what you say, I won’t leave you and I don’t have any intentions of leaving you.”

“...am I not in the way?”

“Don’t misunderstand. If Maria wants to come then I’ll give you a warm welcome. I will never treat you cruelly. But I also think that if you’re hesitating it’s good to give you time to confirm your feelings. Of course if your body is itching for me then I’ll welcome you to come back for a day to have sex.”

Maria looks down, muttering ‘stupid’.

“I understand. Let’s do that... Melissa and the children will be there so I won’t be lonely. Since there won’t be any men around then my appearance may be all messed up... well, Kroll is there. Recently he’s just been staring at my ass though.”

We smile at each other and kiss. We finished our conversation, but Maria is quite the beauty too. They probably don’t have to call a man over in a mansion full of girls. From now until I move, I’ll have to at least get their bodies to succumb.



Next is Irijina. This one seems to be easier than Maria.

“Hardlett-dono! Aren’t you mean?! Are you going to expel me too!?”

“Why do you think so?”

“Why? If you have a wife then you don’t need the other girls right? Then doesn’t that mean you have no use for me?!”

Hm, is that what you were thinking?

“Irijina, there are cakes and grilled chicken in front of you.”

“I know! Both of them are my favorite.”

“You have already ate the cake, well what are you going to do with the grilled chicken?”

“Naturally I will eat it!”

“Right? Even after getting married, you still need other women too.”

“I see! Is that how it is... wait!? That’s strange though? The right way is to have one man and one woman. This isn’t grilled chicken.”

Tch- she used her brain unnecessarily.

“Well, you’ll be embraced by me right now. Do you dislike it?”

“This isn’t the right mood! But it’s not that I dislike it. Our relationship has already involved us thoroughly overlapping our bodies.”

“Then go right now to a single middle-aged man who doesn’t have a lover and do it with him. Get him to make love to you with his crude thing. How about that?”

“What are you saying?! I can’t give my body to such a guy!”

“That’s right, it’s better for you to be embraced by me as a lover than to do it with that kind of man. What’s important is that there is love. It doesn’t matter how many women he surrounds himself with.”

Irijina holds her head and groans. It seems like this is her limit.

“Why don’t you think about it, how many people do you think have died during this war? A large amount of men died, didn’t they?”

“Yeah, I don’t hold a grudge at this time, but it’s terrible...”

“With that many men gone, try pairing one man with one woman. There will be women leftover wouldn’t there?”

As if understanding, Irijina lifted her face.

“If 20,000 men died then there will be 20,000 women remaining. It’s also troubling to eat weaker women. If the women get eaten, and if it is by the man they love, then there will be a lot of women protected and have kids, isn’t that a wonderful thing?”

Irijina mutters 'I see' to herself...

"Men become happy when they embrace a woman. A woman gets a man to make her happy. Isn't this the greatest?"

"...I guess so! Wonderful! Even if Nonna becomes a wife I'll also be loved. Yep, there is no problem!"

It took longer than I thought to convince this stupid kid. While Maria was staring at me, I move on to the next one.



Mel also has experience with being thrown away by a lover, so it might be tough for her.

"I threw everything away when I trusted you, to come here. I have also bore your child. Are you going to throw me away? Where are you going to sell these girls?"

She is angrier than I thought. I didn't know about it since she was quiet and didn't really complain.

"I won't do something like that. I will treasure you. It's not a lie."

"I don't believe you. You should be aware of my past... and being treated like this on top of that; if I have to suffer humiliation again, then I'm prepared to complain about your cruelty to the townspeople and even harm myself."

Mel's elegance doesn't quite reach Nonna's level, but it's a beauty that I don't often see. And also when she's expressionless, I can feel her intimidation.

"My feelings to make you my woman are real. How can I get you to believe me other than with words?"

"Please give me a room. Even not as a legal wife, if you take me as a concubine then I'll believe your love towards me and my daughters."

Naturally, Mel is already 37, no matter how beautiful she is, it would be hard to

imagine what would happen to her at that age carrying 3 children. If I were to throw her away then she would not be able to live except by selling her daughters or her body.

“I understand. I’ll make you my concubine. I will also definitely look after your daughters... will you believe me now?”

“Will you go back on what you said?”

“Did I not keep the promise to come pick you up?”

After we stared at each other for a few seconds, Mel’s expression loosened, crumbling to become a smile. I understood it at that moment, that it was just a bluff.

“Ufufu, mom has worked hard. Now you girls can also proudly say it. That you are the daughters of Viscount Hardlett.”

She hugged the three sisters kindly. Kuu and Ruu didn’t understand what happened earlier in this scene of carnage.

“You tricked me didn’t you... you have quite the determination.”

If she got me angry then there was a possibility that she would lose everything. She has already let go of her land and her house, with her back to the wall she has done well to gamble.

“Ufufu, you shouldn’t underestimate the experience and courage of a mature woman.”

“I’ll engrave it in my heart.”

I won’t complain anymore at this point. I promised the woman I love as a man, I will not change it.

“Besides, I was certain that Aegir-san wouldn’t be ruthless and throw us out. And if by some slim chance that you got angry then the three of us will get naked and ask you for forgiveness.”

Certainly if they did that then I would forgive them for most things.



Next up is Rita and Melissa...

"There is no problem with me."

"I'm also alright, I guess?"

Rita steps forward.

"I have come here and survived after falling in love with Hardlett-sama. In the first place, I don't have such presumptuous thoughts to become your wife. If I could just receive your favor then I don't mind if you take me as your servant or your sex slave."

Rita has a disposition to want people to rule over her. I won't treat her cruelly but I will be ruling over her properly from now on.

"If you want me to say something though, it seems like everyone is split up... why don't you dig my ass and..."

Let's go to the next one.

"I also didn't think of becoming your wife. Well that's because... you see... I can't give birth..."

She didn't put in many words. It's no time to feel compassionate or anything. I just have to love Melissa.

"I like this house, and I also like Aegir-san, and I also love the children. I won't get mad that you made a wife. And besides..."

Melissa brings my ear close so the kids can't hear.

"It's not like I can leave Aegir-san. I've become ruled over by this after all."

She gently strokes my crotch.

The conversation ended simply.



Well, on to the next gate after Maria, from a glance Carla is furious.

“What?! I don’t have anything to say. Are you stupid, marrying a woman like that?”

“Carla I – “

“Aaah- aah-!! I don’t want to hear it. I’m stupid anyway and I suck at conversing with people, anyways I don’t want it.”

I can’t do anything if I can’t even talk to her.

“It’s fine. Nonna is more important to you right? I’ll just leave, I don’t want something like Aegir’s seed anymore.”

Rather than being angry with me...

“Nonna – tell her congratulations, let me know when she gets pregnant. I’ll throw a rock at her.”

Those few words not only caused Nonna, but everyone, to turn pale.

Perhaps she really truly hates Nonna. Because she is frustrated she lost, she is acting desperately. She originally lives her life by her instincts just like a child after all.

If I look carefully though, she’s cursing while tears are forming in her eyes. She’s like a kid who is trying not to cry after getting in a fight.

“Carla... listen.”

“I won’t listen... I don’t care... go away!”

Nonna is looking at Carla, more worried than anyone else. They didn’t get along well, but the both of them are in a relationship that allowed them to badmouth each other without holding back.

I can’t help it if she really isn’t fond of me anymore, but right now I have no reason to throw her outside.

I don't know what to do about the spiteful remarks towards Nonna and myself, surely it is a very unfortunate time for Carla.

"Carla, calm down."

I grab Carla but she struggles.

"Stop! Let go! Go away!!"

"Look after the children."

Melissa hurriedly took the children. This place is dangerous and it won't positively influence the children. I'll convince her in Carla's room. The worried Nonna also comes along.

Once we enter the room, we lock the window and door and throw her on the bed.

"What?! Are you going to do it in this situation? Are you serious? You're only using the thing your pants to think?"

Carla's sharp tongue unexpectedly stings my heart. Even more so, since she is usually quite fond of me.

I'm going to be a little forceful this time, but I have to somehow convince her in bed. If I fail then I'll have to bear the sin of rape.

I forcefully peel her clothes off, and lick her crotch. Even under such circumstances I am able to get erect, what a sinful cock.

"Fuun-! Your thing is just thick. Even a horse's thing is better... nnggh! Don't put it in!"

I used my saliva to get it just wet enough but Carla's insides are dry, almost as if it was another person and it was hard to put it in. But still I put strength in my hips and push it in.

"Uugh... that hurts! You've slept with me so much already and you still don't understand my body? You suck!"

Trying to ease the pain, even if only a little, Nonna licks Carla's breasts and clit. It's the first time that Nonna willingly caresses another woman. But it was tough for the one on the receiving end.

"Nonna! I don't want you to lick me! It's dirty! You'll get me sick! Nnnaah!!!"

However, perhaps it was because it was a woman, but the insides got wet, and moving got easier. Without any delay I made large motions with my hips.

"Uugghu! Don't think it'll be good if you just thrust deep, aanh! Don't suck my breasts! You like Nonna's monster breasts better right?!"

For the time being I'll pour it in once, so I sucked on her breasts and built up my pleasure, then I let it flow out. Nonna also helps me out by licking my ass.

"Hyaau-! Uuuu... your dirty stuff is flowing in me again. But even after you did it so much I probably won't get pregnant, are you sure your sperms are okay? This worthless thing just has size going for it!"

I admire her for the fact that she is continuing to jeer at me, but after that we continue to fuck endlessly, and it was the time a little past noon that Carla finally started to rub my hips with her hand.

"...Thrust a little deeper, nnh-! My breasts, touch them..."

For now it seems I'm able to relax her stubborn heart. I might be able to talk with her soon.

"You don't like that Nonna has become my wife?"

"That's obvious. You know that we don't get along already... from now on what kind of face should I make towards Nonna and Aegirrrr... uuueeeennn!!"

She started wailing. Once we started to talk straightforwardly, she didn't want to feel anymore unnecessarily painful feelings. I stop moving my hips and we continue our conversation.

"What do you dislike the most?"

“You’re calling Nonna your wife right? Then you two will get along with each other, you’ll make a family, then where will I fit in that family. You want me to live each day and watch you two flirt with each other? It’s frustrating! I won’t accept that. But Nonna can read and write, she’s pretty, and she’s useful to Aegir in many different ways. I can’t do anything-!”

In the end, she got mad because she’ll lose the place where she belongs and she’ll feel lonely. But still, she’s quite the sore loser and also not able to settle herself down.

“Don’t worry, I won’t let you feel lonely. I won’t let you feel left out of our group. It will be just like it has always been, we’ll play together, fight together, and maybe Nonna’s sarcastic remarks will get a little worse.”

Nonna got mad, asking me why.

“Really? You still want me? Aegir will still look at me from now on?”

Of course that’s the case, I hug her. Looking back, the next woman that I embraced after Lucy was Carla. Like that I entered her and as I hugged her, her insides which should have gotten used to me by now, seemed to get tighter.

“You’ve gotten much bigger than before, didn’t you.”

Carla rubs my back with her hand. I’m happy that it seems that my thoughts are flowing to her through her special place.

“Just to tell you, it isn’t just that place but your heart and your body as well, you know?”

Then her expression gets cloudy.

“I’m no good. Since that time, I haven’t changed at all.”

“Then shouldn’t you mature little by little? If you stay as you are, that’s fine, if you change then that’s good too. The same as me.”

“Yeah... I’ll also change... for now I’ll at least become able to read letters...”

“Sure, do your best. If it becomes hard for you then come tell me.”

“Ahem, so how long is Carla going to be connected with my husband?”

“Nn~forever... I’ll be happy if time stopped now...”

“Stop fooling around and get away!”

Carla got up quickly. The lively atmosphere has returned, it looks like I don’t have to worry.

“I’ll become a concubine! Then I can steal Aegir away from Nonna whenever I want!”

Nonna, as expected, couldn’t stay quiet and flare up at her, turning it into a grappling match. The two of them were on top of the bed we were using earlier, which was wet with so much dirty liquid that it could not be distinguished anymore. However the two of them had cheerful expressions, like they were unbound by anything.



“I’m sorry!”

Carla gathered everyone again and right now she lowered her head to the ground to apologize.

“And I also became Aegir’s concubine! I’ll work hard and kick down Nonna!”

“I won’t lose to someone like you.”

The both of them returned to normal, so everyone sighed a breath of relief. Carla is the longest serving member of the girls. I don’t think she’s good because she’s the most veteran, but it seems everyone already thought that Carla has become a concubine.

What about Irijina? Is she a concubine too? As I was thinking that, Kroll said he was going to do some training and went off to the garden. By the time he comes back after swinging the spear, I’ll have forgotten everything.

Well, other than the fact that it is a little complicated with Maria, everything is in order. But there is one last person remaining that is quite troublesome to deal with.



“Aegir-sama... is this my room...? This is good, I actually had a frightening dream.”

“A dream that Nonna became my wife?”

“No, you heard wrong. Nonna-san because Aegir-sama’s horse. Her breasts are scraping the ground.”

It’s painful to see her trying to escape reality.

“You are my adjutant, you are my precious Celia.”

“ .. ”

Celia stares into my eyes but then she sighs and covers her face.

“In the first place, I thought it was strange that you were lining up nine women around you... but I thought that this day would come too.”

Mel, Rita, Melissa, Carla, Maria, Irijina, Nonna and lastly Celia. Isn’t there one missing?

“Catherine has been coming to visit you, hasn’t she?! You thought I wouldn’t notice that she sneaks out?”

Oh, so she found out about it. Then I should call her to my room from now on. The story has gone off track though.

“Then why did you fall over?”

“ .. ”

“Come here.”

I hug Celia and lift her up, sitting her on the bed and putting her in between my legs. It seems she likes this position the best. Then I’ll stroke her head like this and it’ll calm her down, causing her to lean against me.

“I don’t have a reason not to take you, since you’re so cute. Tell me, what has gotten

you so shocked?"

Still Celia remains silent, but as I continued to stroke her head she started to mumble something.

"When you are together with other people... even if they are nobles from another house... I never thought that Aegir-sama would throw me away."

"Thanks for trusting me. That's exactly right, so what about it?"

"I'm sorry. I haven't studied enough so I don't know how to put it in words."

"You don't have to think how to say it. Just let it out as it is, I won't get mad."

I wouldn't understand even if you were to use that roundabout way of speaking, which you don't know how to use.

"I thought, I was in the way. I am Aegir-sama's woman, but I'm not like the other girls and I have a different kind of connection, I think. Not just a woman... but..."

"Like parent and child...?"

Celia twitches. I must have guessed right, certainly she doesn't look at me as just a master or lover. I didn't have parents either so I don't really understand but...

"Yes... that's why when everyone else had a relationship as a lover and a woman, I thought that I was the only one different."

My hand stops stroking Celia's head, but she reaches out a hand and wants me to continue.

"When Mel-san brought Aegir-sama's child with her I was really surprised... but I convinced myself that the seeds sowed over there are still budding."

Reasonable.

"But, getting married with Nonna-san and having kids will make it a three-person family. The wife and the child... I'm foreign since I've already grown halfway."

Celia is the same as Carla, if I form a family then she will lose the place where she belongs and feel lonely. It seems her feelings of us as parent and child are stronger though.

"At least... won't you give Mel-san some reconsideration? Mel-san is already at that age and after a few years she will move up out of woman status. Thus I can have a place as a woman."

Let's keep those words locked up. You don't yet understand how scary Mel can be.

"I guess... so you want to be my absolute number one?"

"I do. But I will never be... A person like Aegir-sama will attract girls no matter what."

If it's not flattery then she views me quite highly. I just love women though.

"Then do you think my love will decrease if you are one person out of five?"

"My time with you will be decreased... but I don't think the feelings will decrease."

"Then that's fine. In the future, even if 10 children are born or 100 children are born, Celia will always be included, my love for you will not decrease."

"100 people... no, you're going to be sleeping with 20 women for five years...?"

100 people is just a figure of speech, don't calculate it.

"I understand. I don't intend to overturn what Aegir-sama has decided. I am delighted that you took the time to talk to me like this."

Celia stands up. Her gait is quite proper. She's alright now.

"How are the others doing?"

I told her that Maria is having some doubts.

"I see... I would really like it if Maria-san stays. There are few people here with common sense, well actually if it's people with common sense then we might have to abandon the man who is surrounding himself with nine women."

“You said it, didn’t you.”

“Hyaa! Don’t tickle me!”

I lift Celia up and tickle her. Once a dispute gets resolved, the relationship between man and woman deepens. I was fooling around with Celia but it made my sexual desire light up.

“Hug me, please.”

“Sure.”

When the both of us got naked, Celia made a slightly dangerous suggestion.

“Um... is it alright if I called you dad?”

As expected, she spews it out, but Celia’s face remains serious. It’s not like I’ll lose anything so I don’t mind but it makes me feel like I’ve become a pervert.

“Dad. Celia has grown bigger. Could dad hug me please?”

Celia has gotten into it already. If I stop her here, then I’ll cause her to be embarrassed.

“Yeah, you’re bigger, your body is getting sexier. Look, Celia has done this.”

I have her touch my erect cock. I invite Celia to the bed and we lie down.

“Celia, let’s do it!”

I lift her thin leg up and put my cock into her center. Her insides are very narrow, but with her hands and legs rubbing my back and waist, she urges me to go even deeper.

“Aaah dad! It’s thick! It’s big! Dad’s penis feels good.”

She’s continuously using words that she hasn’t used normally before. We were having sex like a couple while at the same time, it was like a dad spoiling his child. This immoral feeling is turning me on.

“Celia! Does it feel good!?”

“It feels good! I love you, dad. Please slam it against me more. When I imagine my dad thrusting into me, it feels like my heart will fly away.”

Just as she wished, I changed the way I was thrusting and purposely made louder sounds. It seems those sounds turned Celia on even more.

“You don’t have to hold back, you know? I’m already an adult. Dad has helped me grow up and become an adult woman.”

I also felt like I’ve become Celia’s father. I’m getting turned on and my cock enlarges even more, causing Celia’s small hole to spread apart, almost as if it was going to tear.

“Amazing! Dad’s penis is so big!”

“Yeah, Celia’s insides feel good too! Relax even more. Or it’s going to rip.”

“I can’t dad, it feels too good and my hole is squeezing on its own.”

As her words suggested, Celia’s vagina is stretched more than its limit and yet it is still clenching tightly to me. The hole is eagerly squeezing me, but I push back with my rock hard cock and the rubbing helps to pleasure me in return.

“Aaau!! Nnkyaa!”

“Hm!?”

Finally, Celia’s hole yielded and started to convulse. Even she herself couldn’t control the convulsions of her vagina, especially since she is toned, it was quite strong. If it was your ordinary man, then the tightening would have caused intense pain, but my cock doesn’t lose in terms of strength.

“Haha, it’s squeezing me quite nicely.”

“Dad I’m sorry! The hole is just doing it by itself!!”

“It’s fine. You’re quite cute.”

I put in more strength and continue to move. It is tightening to the limit and Celia’s

special place is rubbing my cock with lots of strength, it is quite the stimulation as I thrust.

“Dad!! Nnnaaaaaaah!!”

The cute Celia stretches her legs and tenses, grabbing the sheets and bending her body back like a shrimp. Her vision gets blurry, and she’s clearly climaxing, but even so I don’t stop moving. I rub her vagina even further, and suck her unnaturally erect nipples.

“Aah aah aah! Aaaaaaaah-!!”

Her legs stretch out once again. And again, after her hole tightens, her entire body loses strength and her hole also loosens up. Her nipples that were erect like corks also got smaller.

“Are you satisfied?”

“...Haa... yes. I-I’m happy...”

Celia has tasted a remarkably large climax, and was still remaining in a trance-like state of ecstasy. However, her narrow insides continue to rub my cock and my seed already seems to want to spill out. The rod is twitching and pulsing, I can tell that the seed is rising up from my walls.

“Aah... Dad’s semen is climbing up his penis...”

Celia, who is still connected with me, can feel the rhythm of my pulsing and can tell that I’m nearing ejaculation. But I can’t make my daughter pregnant.

“Celia... I’m cumming.”

“Please let it out whenever! Let out papa’s sperm on Celia!!”

The way she speaks has completely changed but besides that, it is more important that I let out my seed.

“Celia, I’m letting it out on your face!”

“Eeh!? M-my face? Alright... go ahead, I’m ready!”

Celia places both hands next to her face and closes her eyes, then sticks her tongue out.

“Uuooo!!”

Just before I ejaculated, I pull my cock out from the girl’s tight hole and stroke it vigorously in front of her face. I rub my cock on the tongue that she stuck out to increase my stimulation, then start to cum.

“Guh!!”

“Waa! It’s hot!!”

With the momentum of a downpour, my seed spurts out, sticking to Celia’s cute face. These days I’ve only been ejaculating inside vaginas or inside mouths, so it’s been awhile since I’ve seen the stuff that comes out. There was a surprisingly large amount, painting Celia’s entire face white.

“Abbhu, myaa!”

Too much came out so of course there was some that went in her nose. There’s so much dripping that I can’t recognize her original face anymore.

“Fuu... that was good.”

I took a breather after the ejaculation on her face was over.

“Dad’s smell... it’s all over my face and sticky.”

She couldn’t really open her eyes so she gathered up the semen with her hands and poured it in her mouth. My goal has been accomplished. Celia will still be my cute Celia from now on.



Celia wipes her body carefully with a towel, but as expected, there is still a stench. The only solution is to take a bath.

She arranged her clothes and opened the door, there she saw Kroll who turned red, and Alma. They were holding tubs filled with water, were they intending to take care of Celia? But they came at a bad time, they could probably hear everything and above all, it was bad that it was Kroll.

“...Did you hear?”

Celia's voice is entirely different than her previously sweet voice, she makes a threatening voice.

“Um, um... hauu.”

“Fu-fun! ‘Dad it feels good’, like that!”

Alma curls up and Kroll mocks her. A kid like that is purposely taking this kind of attitude towards the girl he likes. Normally, you would pay him back for all the cruel things he did.

But that's the wrong choice. Celia won't become an obedient girl if you hold onto her weakness. She's the type of person who would shut those people up.

Kroll should also realize that Celia's atmosphere has changed. When she is unable to change her expression then it becomes a really dangerous situation. He turned back and ran away at high speed.

“Wait you shitty brat! I'll rip that nasty tongue out!”

Celia lowered her posture and stooped over, then burst forward with great momentum. It is only for now that Kroll has run away, if he's here then that means that Irijina is also back and she'll stop him.

“Aaaaaaaa...”

First of all, Alma has wet herself because of the earlier murderous intent. Even though she came over to look after you, with this it will make it even harder for her to deal with Celia.

In conclusion, Nonna has become the legal wife, while Mel and Carla became

concubines. Celia and Irijina will work hard in their duties, and Melissa and Rita will stay the same and are fine with being lovers. Only Maria was left, and there is a possibility that she might leave.

So that it doesn't happen and while everyone is in the capital, I'll have to thoroughly give them my affection. Everyone's feelings are all pent up, so for that reason, it was quite intense.



As the day breaks and the girls are in bed, snoring away, I gave up on sleeping and went out to the garden to bathe in the morning sun and swing my sword. The Dual Crater reflects the morning sun, making me feel something like a hero holding a holy blade of light.

"You're quite early."

Leopolt?... it seems he retired to bed early yesterday.

"Do you have any opinions about my marriage?"

"Speaking based just in terms of career advancement, I think it would have been better if you got a woman who was of a higher status."

I thought he would say that. He doesn't betray my expectations.

"But even if you get a wife from a Margrave's family you won't be able to rise above Margrave. I, who am following you, will be even lower."

Leopolt's eyes look off to the distance.

"During the time you were injured, I was in the command of Lord Radhalde, and he was quite skilled."

"What's that? You want to change jobs?"

"No, he is skilled and has no slip ups, he plays his hand only when they are certain... but that is all. He is an excellent commander who takes control of his army, and he is the king's favorite, which he will use to advance his career, but that's it."

That sounds like an ideal life though.

“Since a long time ago, I had a habit of predicting things way in advance. I am pretty much able to predict Lord Radhalde’s future... however I can’t predict yours. It clearly seems foolish, but your results are making great progress.”

Leopolt turns back. He’s expressionless as usual, but without a doubt he was smiling. It was a face with confidence.

“It was the first time in my life that I have thought this. That this person is interesting. When I look at you, other people... with me included, other people’s way of living looks dull.”

“This kind of praise doesn’t suit you. Did you eat something bad?”

“The smell of sex has drifted all the way over here. It might be because of that poison.”

He sneered.

“I want to see your destination. Will you end up a fool and quickly throw your life away, or will you be that ‘something’ handed down 1000 years from now?”

“I might unsurprisingly settle down as a normal feudal lord noble, and once I get kids I won’t need anything else, you know?”

“You’re joking, I can’t see much of your future but there is one thing I know.”

The morning sun rises in full, his and my eyes squint at the brightness.

“What awaits you is not an ordinary life. A brutal death or a tremendous glory, it’s one or the other.”

“Will you follow me?”

“I will accompany you. I will follow you and grab that glory, and if my dreams get shattered, I will fall into hell.”

“If it’s like that, then I would be like a demon, tempting people.”

Leopolt hit his hand with his fist as if he realized something. What did he realize?

“You’re taking the lives of many on the battlefield and indulging in sinful pleasures with women at night. It is just like some class of evil spirit.”

Tell me about it. This relationship might continue until one of us dies. Leopolt comes over and we bump shoulders.

Well it’s about time we go back. He has Nina and I have Celia, who is looking at me with a pale face.

“E-Aegir-sama! Don’t tell me you’re going to sleep with a man too!? Homosexuality isn’t good! That is the way to destruction!”

The day starts with me giving Celia a flick to her forehead. In addition, Nonna seems to have called Miti and is acting out the story that she missed out on hearing.

Protagonist: Aegir Hardlett 20 years old Winter

(Traditional age reckoning)

Status: Goldonia Kingdom Viscount Eastern Independent Army Commander

Feudal Lord of Arkland Southeast Area

Assets: 860 gold (silver and below not counted)

Weapons: Dual Crater (large sword), Jeweled spear (temporary)

Equipment: Black Cloak (Cursed)

Family: Nonna (wife), Carla (concubine), Mel (concubine), Sue (daughter),

Melissa, Maria, Rita, Kuu, Ruu, Catherine (commuting)

Servants: Sebastian, Miti, Alma, Kroll, Nina

Subordinates: Celia (adjutant and pseudo daughter), Irijina (private army commander),

Leopolt (army commander), Schwartz (horse), Adolph (domestic affairs official)

Sexual Partners: 39, persons who got pregnant: 6

CHAPTER 57.5

CHARACTER INTRODUCTION AND WORLD MAP

Protagonist

Aegir Hardlett

20 years old. Black hair. Goldonia Viscount. Eastern Independent Army Commander.
Feudal Lord of Former Arkland Southeastern Area

The protagonist is blessed with talent for fighting, as well as having muscular build and kinetic vision. He can't do strategic planning or tactics. His final goal is to become king; he loves women and is great in bed, and his range of women is also wide. In addition, his matured cock is in the monster class.

Family (female)

Celia

16 years old. Silver hair. Height 156cm B78 W56 H78

Way of addressing protagonist: Aegir-sama, Self: I (watashi)

The protagonist's adjutant, she keeps her public and private life separate and is the closest to him. To satisfy her heart's desire, she offered her virginity to the protagonist, and fulfills her role as a lover. She knows how to read, write and do math, and shows talent in a wide variety of fields. Her loyalty is strong, bordering on fanaticism.

Nonna

19 years old. Brown hair. Height 160 B113 W61 H84

Way of addressing protagonist: Aegir-sama, Self: I (watakushi)

The protagonist's legal wife. The daughter of the destroyed Elektra family, entrusting her heirloom sword to the protagonist and swears to reclaim Elektra. She is familiar with manners and etiquette, and knowledgeable of noble's common sense but uninformed about commoners' common sense and spending habits. She has sharp hearing and is the type of person who nags when she complains. She puts on a refined and elegant mask but when in lust, she has a preference towards masochism. Her breasts are already abnormally large, but they are still growing. She has overwhelming

beauty, surpassing those even in the family.

Carla

Mid 20's Brown hair. Height 165 B88 W60 H88

Way of addressing protagonist: Aegir, Self: I (atashi)

The protagonist's concubine. A former hunter and expert archer. Her current goal is to steal the protagonist from Nonna and work hard in creating a child. She also encourages perverted hobbies.

Mel

37 years old. Blonde hair. Height 160 B86 W63 H92

Way of addressing protagonist: Aegir-san, Self: I (watashi)

The protagonist's concubine. Mel was a noble's lover but was thrown away after getting pregnant. She was severely burned in a wildfire, but the protagonist saved her and slept with her. Once separated but is now reunited, giving birth to the protagonist's daughter.

Kuu

18 years old. Blonde hair. Height 156 B80 W57 H84

Mel's daughter. Kuu is supporting the relationship between her mother and the protagonist. Had her first kiss stolen. She has feelings for the protagonist, and her body is slowly developing.

Ruu

14 years old. Blonde hair. Height 145 B72 W54 H72

Mel's daughter. Ruu goes out into town to sell things. She is nervous, timid, and a little bit slow; she's quick to stumble and slip up. She has feelings for the protagonist but at the same time relies on him as her father.

Sue

1 year old. The protagonist's biological daughter.

Maria

23 years old. Chestnut-coloured hair. Height 164 B74 W58 H80

Way of addressing protagonist: Aegir-san, Self: I (watashi)

A girl from the Roleil's Little Bird Pavilion inn who fell in love with the protagonist

after he slept with her and went with the flow. Maria is good at cooking and works hard to support her livelihood. She's gentle, kind and liked by the children, but is a scaredy cat who can't deal with fighting. She's currently worrying about her present and future situation – whether or not to follow the protagonist. Her breasts are small, even Celia and Miti are clearly surpassing her.

Irijina Wolls

22 years old. Light brown hair. Height 181 B93 W68 H88

Way of addressing protagonist: Hardlett-dono, Self: I (watashi)

The commander of a private army. Irijina was a soldier of the former Arkland army but was captured by the protagonist and fucked, becoming his lover. She's a master of the spear, proud of her manly herculean strength. She has a lively personality, but is unfamiliar with relations between man and woman. Also quite naive.

Rita

28 years old. Black hair. Height 170 B88 W61 H92

Way of addressing protagonist: Hardlett-sama, Self: I (watashi)

The feudal lord in Datrohn fell in love with her at first sight and took her in as a servant, but treated her as a toy. After the fall of Datrohn, Rita was brought to bed together with the protagonist and was charmed by him. She is skilled in housework, and is also highly capable in managing people. She desires to be dominated; loves large cocks.

Melissa

26 years old. Red hair. Height 164 B90 W59 H88

Way of addressing protagonist: Aegir-san, Self: I (watashi)

A prostitute from White City. Due to a tragic experience in her past, her genitals were damaged but has good compatibility with the protagonist. Because Melissa is unable to bear children, she has really gotten fond of the children servants. She likes to wear racy clothes. She plans to stay behind in the capital to look after the mansion as well as the children servants.

Catherine

23 years old. Blonde hair. Height 156 B80 W57 H82

Way of addressing protagonist: Dear (anata)

A blonde beauty. Catherine is the daughter of the rebelling noble, but for the sake of saving her child, was convinced by the protagonist to give up her body. Currently, she is living together with her daughter, Rose, in the orphanage. She's hysteric and has outrageous assumptions. She is sensitive and gets turned on easily. She's extremely lewd, so she has quite the toughness when it comes to sex. Her body has succumbed to pleasure and can no longer leave the protagonist.

Miti

15 years old. Black hair. Height 153 B76 W56 H78

Way of addressing protagonist: Master (danna-sama), Aegir-sama

Miti left the orphanage to live and work at the mansion. She's good at dealing with things, and is the older sister out of the three kids from the orphanage; also admires Maria. Her work includes cooking, laundry, and other various chores. She secretly gets angry at Nonna's sarcastic remarks. The protagonist showed her some incredible sex and now she's sexually frustrated. She has a habit of peeping.

Alma

12 years old. Black hair

Way of addressing protagonist: she doesn't

The youngest of the orphanage trio. Alma is a scaredy cat and always hides behind Miti. She's skilled with her hands, so her work includes knitting and sewing. The only people she can talk to are Miti and Kroll. Especially when Celia gets close, she gets scared to death and can't move.

Nina

13 years old. Light brown hair

Way of addressing protagonist: Hardlett-sama

The caregiver who Leopolt brought with him. Her work includes the entirety of looking after him and she has a little bit of a crush on him.

Women (separated)

Mireille

Mid 20's Red hair. Height 172 B84 W62 H90

Way of addressing protagonist: Aegir, Self: I (atai)

Mireille met the protagonist while she was with Carla and worked together with him

for a while. She has a determined personality and is boyish. Superior in handling a sword. Her actual family is in Sheera village where she has a large family, and in fear of the possibility of a famine, she returned to her family and has split up with the protagonist.

Claire

23 years old. Black hair. Height 163 B80 W60 H82

Former daughter of a noble, wanting to regain her family name but ended up being a bandit, was defeated by the protagonist and was raped, even in the ass. Claire ran away and headed for the republic of Stura.

Colette & Arisa

Resident of the village and town of the eastern part of the Federation.

Colette and Arisa were kidnapped and sold as slaves, but they were saved by the protagonist and returned to their hometown. They offered their virginities together.

Claudia Albens Malordol

34 years old. Blonde hair. Height 160 B88 W70 H94

Wife of a marquess. Due to discord with her husband, was left in White City. Claudia invited the protagonist, who stole her daughter's virginity, to sleep with her but became captivated by him. When time came to part ways, she even offered her daughter to stop him from leaving. Currently, she uses her extra large dildo regularly, and moans loudly like an animal every night.

Christina Albens Malordol

20 years old. Chestnut coloured hair. Height 159 B83 W57 H83

Christina is the child of a concubine and was thrown to White City because of her problematic behaviour, her relationship with her mother is lacking and in one immoral misconduct, offered her virginity to the protagonist. She fears the sudden transformation of her mother, and developed a phobia for men, calming her immoral misconducts.

Lucy Yuktovania

500 years old?? Silver hair. Height 166 B100 W58 H96

Way of addressing protagonist: Dear (anata), Boy

Self-declared vampire who has lived more than 500 years, Lucy has inhuman strength and demonic eyes which can send those whom it sees to their death. She protects the house deep inside the forest and is the one responsible for the lost kingdom? She is a peerless beauty, having god-like model's style, and has extraordinarily tremendous sex techniques.

She raised the protagonist, as well as gave him his reason to live (the protagonist took her as her lover but also treats her as a mother). She promised to become the protagonist's woman if he becomes king and rules over the area in the vicinity around Erg forest, and this promise is the origin of all of the protagonist's actions. Her existence is absolute and takes priority over everything else.

Companions (men, subordinates)

Leopolt Fugenberg

21 years old. Eastern Independent army Commander

Way of addressing protagonist: Lord Hardlett

Leopolt appealed directly to the protagonist and became his subordinate. Excellent leadership ability and has talent in commanding. Also has knowledge about politics and conspiracy. Shares ambition with the protagonist.

Adolph Fulker

28 years old. Slender build. Domestic Affairs official (interim)

Way of addressing protagonist: Hardlett-sama

Former parliamentary official of Arkland and was thrown in prison for criticizing the upper echelon, but was rescued by the protagonist. Adolph is knowledgeable in government affairs; also has innovative ideas. He is shameless and aloof from the world but is unable to fight.

Sebastian Mizels

55 years old. Slender build Butler

Way of addressing protagonist: Master (danna-sama)

Sebastian served as a butler for a noble family but lost his job when Goldonia was undergoing reform. Was hired by the protagonist. He is courteous and polite, highly capable of business and administration. He is a calm elderly gentleman.

Kroll

13 years old. Child Blonde hair

Way of addressing protagonist: Aegir-sama

The only boy in the orphanage trio. Kroll was taken from the orphanage to do chores which requires a man. His duties include chopping wood, starting fire, etc. The women he can't disobey are increasing, including Melissa, Carla and Irijina. He is troubled by the size of his dick, and masturbates every day.

Christoph

24 years old. Macho Rank-and-file soldier Originated from the Federation

Way of addressing protagonist: Aegir, Captain

Christoph was born as a commoner and former citizen of the Federation. He escaped along with Agor. He is weak despite his looks and is frivolous, having a weak mind and openly perverted. His worth comes from being cheerful, and he is hated by the protagonist's group of lovers. He is planning to join the protagonist's private army.

Mack

30 years old. Height 2m. Super macho. Muscular daruma. Muscle demon. Rank-and-file soldier.

Way of addressing protagonist: no subject

A former slave but was released by the protagonist and company. Mack is the only person who comes close to comparing to the protagonist in terms of strength. His entire body is muscular and is bulky like a gorilla, almost like a monstrous beast. He isn't good at dealing with Nonna, who was brought together with him by the same slave merchant. He doesn't have much experience with women.

Personnel (Country, army)

Alexandro Goldonia (Alexandro the First)

29 years old. Goldonian king.

After his father's death, Alexandro murdered his brother and uncle and ascended to the throne. In order to strengthen his royal authority, he uses a variety of schemes. He aims for Goldonia to be the strongest nation, and rejects the principle of peace his father advocated. He established the central army and is excellent in planning; can also perform cold-hearted tactics. He relies heavily on the protagonist and others with

superb abilities as the core for his central army.

Marquess Gudroit Hoover

51 years old. Royal army Supreme Commander.

Gudroit is the supreme commander who unifies all the armies, but the central army is managed and commanded by the king himself, so he has no power to influence it. He is stubborn and doesn't have the king's trust. Due to the rise of the central army, he has lost his actual authority, and his popularity is in decline.

Count Erich Radhalde

31 years old. Central army captain. Feudal lord of the former Arkland northeastern area.

Erich has been serving as the army captain since the days of the Wings of Dawn. He is highly capable in tactics, politics, and leadership. He has a good personal relationship with the protagonist. He is one of the king's favourites, and is a new noble.

Baron Bruno Renster

26 years old. Affiliated with the Central army.

A veteran soldier since the Wings of Dawn days. Bruno has climbed to his current standing from a rank-and-file soldier. He has a steady leadership and has established himself to be quite tenacious but is lacking in explosive offensive power. He has a rather good relationship with the protagonist. He is a new noble.

Count Kenneth Baldwin

40 years old. Goldonia's Foreign Minister.

Kenneth was appointed by the king in the newly established position as minister. He is skilled in conspiracies and scheming.

Agor

30's. Company commander affiliated with the Goldonia central army.

Agor fled from the Federation and is a former subordinate of the protagonist. He has above-average abilities as a company commander, and is an individually strong soldier. He is a closet pervert and goes back and forth to visit the widow, and brought along the maid that took care of him in Datrohn and is hiding her. The affiliation is

separate but he still continues to be good friends with the protagonist.

Personnel (Others)

Andrei

42 years old. Bearded. Large man.

Andrei fled from the Federation, now owning the Hard-boiled Pavilion inn, and is quite the dandy and austere man. He is a severe lolicon and has yearned for the girl 30 years younger than him, getting her pregnant, destroying his popularity. Since then, his family and his employees treated him coldly. He had a son with Natalie. Recently, he has been sexually frustrated and is commuting to the orphanage.

Natalie

19 years old. Has an infant's short stature.

Andrei's wife, who can only be seen as a child around 10 years old. Natalie is planning to castrate Andrei because he impregnated another girl.

Dorothea

41 years old. Director of the orphanage. Thin.

The middle-aged woman in charge of managing the orphanage. Dorothea tries her best from the very beginning to do everything she can for the sake of all the children. She is a quick thinker. Since she has improved her meals, she has gotten plumper and has returned to being quite an attractive mature lady. She is wary of Andrei.

Aurelia

19 years old. Helper at the orphanage Tiny

A girl who was raised in the orphanage. Aurelia helps Dorothea around the orphanage. She's a lively but child-like girl. She misunderstands Andrei's passionate looks at her as a father's love but already...



Relations between Countries With a simple map

A comparison of national strength between countries.

A few more countries may be added in the vicinity in the future.

Goldonia Kingdom

Population: 1.55 million

Ruler: Alexandro the First

Capital: Goldonia – population: 60,000

System: Feudal

Military personnel: Peace times – 40,000 / maximum mobilization – 150,000

Dominated area: Entirety of the northern part of the central plains

The largest nation in the central plains. Located on the north end of the central plains, trades with Olga Federation using the Nosterries river and the land route, cultural exchange is prosperous. With the fight for a successor and the crowning of a new king, the strengthening of the army and the royal authority is continuing. The influence is shifting from traditional nobles to the new nobles now that the new king has been established. As the main force in the Arkland war and having won, the other country has been dismantled, and the north and south parts have been annexed. As of now, the army is being reinforced at a tremendous speed.

Treia Kingdom

Population: 400,000

Ruler: —

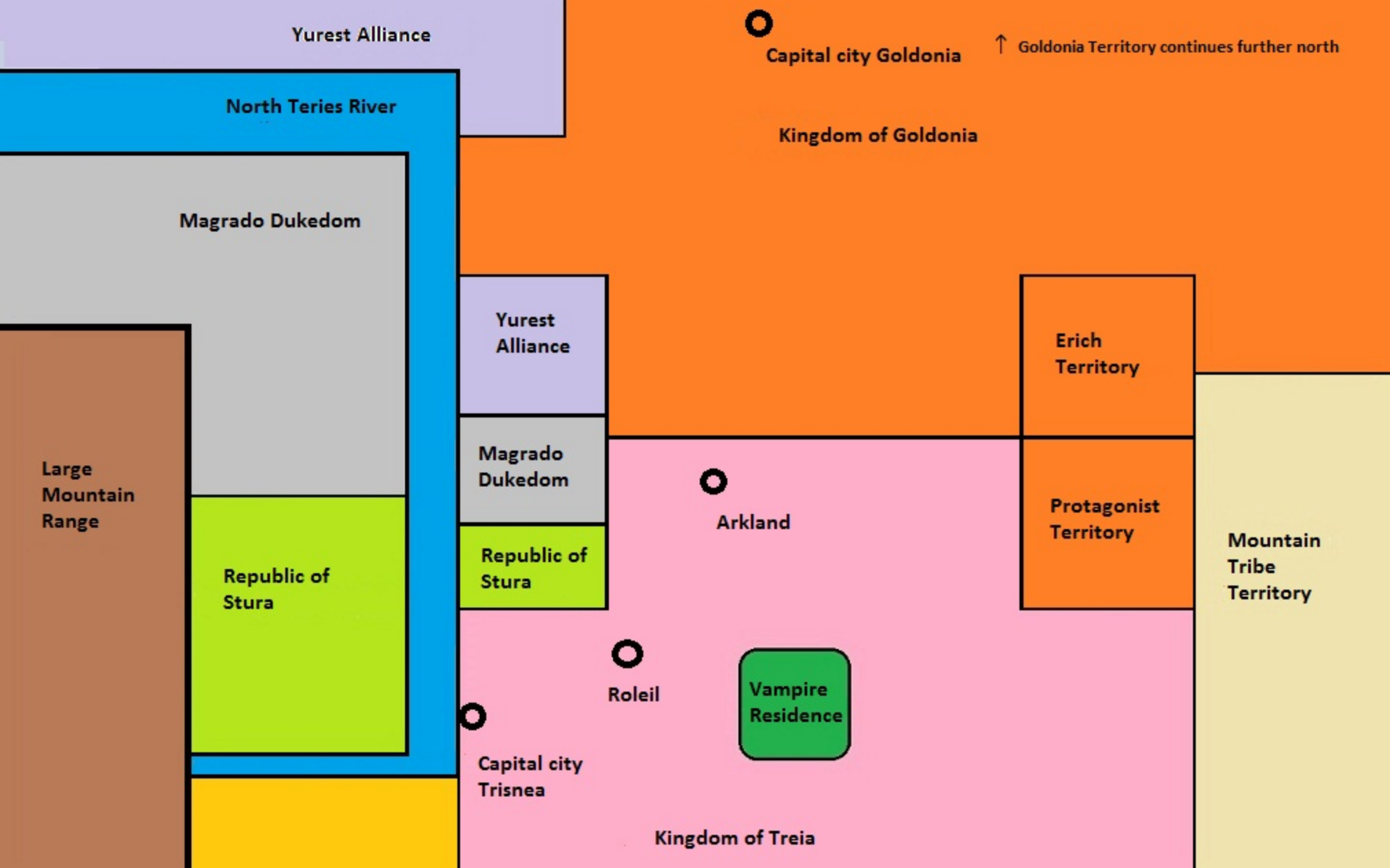
Capital: Trisnea – population: 20,000

System: Feudal

Military personnel: Peace times – 12,000 / maximum mobilization – 50,000

Dominated area: Central area of the central plains

It is your typical small country in the central plains but is continuing to grow larger. Inside the country is the famous Erg forest, also known as the forest of death. Compared to the amount of population, there is a lot of land, but there are also lots of remote areas. They can be self sufficient in both agriculture and mining, but they can't say they are especially rich. As a result of the Arkland war, they annexed the south half and the capital. However, the southern area has suffered tremendous damage, and furthermore, the occupied citizens have been holding animosity against the country for many years, so they are unable to obtain the fruits of their occupation of that area.



Yurest Alliance

Capital city Goldonia

↑ Goldonia Territory continues further north

North Teries River

Kingdom of Goldonia

Magrado Dukedom

Yurest Alliance

Erich Territory

Large Mountain Range

Magrado Dukedom

Arkland

Republic of Stura

Republic of Stura

Protagonist Territory

Mountain Tribe Territory

Roleil

Vampire Residence

Capital city Trisnea

Kingdom of Treia

CHAPTER 58

CURRENT STATUS OF THE TERRITORY

-Aegir POV-

During the coldest time of the year, we warm ourselves by the fireplace while drinking tea. Since only family members are here, we don't have to be mindful of our manners so everyone is lying around however they wish. I was lying on Mel's lap pillow and accept the cup from Nonna. The sensation of Mel's thighs, perhaps because of her age, is slightly fluffy and feels the best.

"Ahn, what a pervert."

While sleeping on Mel's lap, I fondle Nonna's breasts. As if rebuking me, Mel kisses me on the forehead and strokes my hair.

As time passed slowly, I was about to fall into a short nap but something suddenly popped up in my head.

"I forgot!!!"

"Ngyaa!"

Mel and Nonna were surprised at my voice, Carla screamed. It seems her ear-cleaner went in too deep.

"What's wrong?"

Only Celia remained calm.

"I forgot about that guy. I should probably go over there soon."

Celia's face warps, I also heard her clicking her tongue, but does she really not get along with that guy?

"Then Yog-"

“I just let Adolph go to the territory like that. I have to go and check on his results.”

Celia was blinking in surprise.

“Ah... you’re talking about that. You’re certainly right, you have to go confirm that.”

“Hm? Is there anything else?”

“No, it’s nothing. There’s nothing. If you’re going then I’ll have to prepare, for horses it would take 3 days... if two people were to ride on Schwartz, can we get there in 2 days?”

Celia is fully intent on going together with me. According to Maria, last time I went to pick up Mel and left her behind, it seems she was really irritated. It couldn’t be helped that Alma was afraid.

“I’ll bring Celia along with me this time, but I also want to recruit people for my private army. Irijina, you come too.”

Irijina is the commander of my private army, but at the moment she is the only member. Other than swinging her spear in the garden, there shouldn’t be any tasks she needs to do.

“Leave it to me! My spear has also returned, so there is nothing to fear!”

The reason Irijina is in high spirits is because her heirloom spear came back. I thought it was lost in the fire along with the royal palace, but it seems a soldier picked it up, and when I heard about it I bought it off him for 20 gold. Although it’s called an heirloom, it’s not something fancy with ornaments covering it so the soldier was astonished at the amount and happily gave it to me.

“I’m also going!”

Carla recovered after hurting her ears and jumped up. Then she was restrained by Nonna.

“You can’t! Celia-san and Irijina-san are working. You are only trying to get pregnant!”

“But getting pregnant is a concubine’s job, isn’t it? What’s wrong with that?”

“You should help me, the legal wife, get pregnant first!”

“This is tyranny! If I get pregnant first, I can be free to swing around the power!”

(Who was it that taught her something unnecessary...)

“It will only take a week to come back, so be good and wait. This time it is really for work. If I leave the territory alone for too long, they’ll say something.”

There are quite a few among the territory nobles who leave the management to an acting officer, while staying in the capital themselves too, but in my case, it is also my mission to maintain peace in the local area. I have not been given an independent army either, but it would be bad if I didn’t even see the local area yet.

“Also, there’s a little place I want to go to close to the capital. I’m counting on you two for journey preparations.”

The place I want to drop by is the blacksmith, I plan to get a new spear. The one that Lucy gave me was broken. It made me sad since the spear broke. The Dual Crater has an incredible sharpness, but when I unsheathe it, its blade is brilliant and stands out too much and if I want to swing it while riding a horse, it isn’t long enough.



“It’s me. Is it done?”

“Yes. Lord Hardlett, I finished it with the highest priority.”

The face of the blacksmith is puzzled, contrary to his words.

“What’s wrong? Are you not satisfied with it?”

“No, the workmanship of the spear is fine, but is it alright?”

The blacksmith handed me the spear; its length is 3m and the large and wide spearhead stood out. The abnormal part of the spear was the thickness and material of the handle, in addition, it is made entirely of steel. The grip part already has wood

and leather stretched on the surface to prevent slipping, but excluding that, it's a chunk of metal.

"Just as you desired, it's sturdy you know? Any spear that clashes with this one would break, and on top of horses and such, it won't bend at all."

I take the spear from him. It is even heavier than the previous spear, but its length is advantageous when used on a horse and its large and heavy spearhead can crush enemies. It's perfect to fit my style of fighting by mowing down enemies.

The handle being made entirely of steel can easily block the blades of the enemies, if I want to beat people up, then it could also serve the same purpose as a club.

"This is fine. How much is it?"

"I used up quite a considerable amount of steel. It also took some time so 40 gold is... about right"

It costs a fortune, but it's not something I'll regret. Without haggling the price I hand the bag of gold to the blacksmith, who showed a relieved expression. He was probably afraid that I would be displeased and complain, hesitating on giving him the fees. He didn't think that he would be able to sell this spear to anyone but me either. Thinking about the amount of steel the blacksmith used, it was quite a gamble for him.

"I know it's strange to say it after receiving the payment, but don't you think it's too heavy? It weighs the same as seven and a half regular spears. My pupil is an idiot who brags about his strength, but even he is barely able to pick it up..."

I hold the spear in one hand and give it a huge swing. I switch to holding it with both hands and make two quick thrusts. The shopkeeper opened his mouth in amazement.

"It's fine. Something like this isn't a problem."

I'll just need Schwartz to get used to its weight later, but he didn't feel anything when Celia and I were riding together while wearing armor, so he should be fine.

"You did well. I might come back for sharpening so I'll be counting on you for that."

"S-... sure..."

I should hurry and meet up with Celia and the others. There's only the three of us here so it might be nice to put Celia on my lap and tease her. If I have Irijina ride on as well, it would probably be tough for Schwartz though.



-Blacksmith POV-

"Boss~ what happened? You're over there looking like an idiot."

The pupil finished taking a break and was confused when he saw the dumbfounded blacksmith.

"Nothing's wrong with me. That monster was swinging that thing with one hand."

"Eeh, the owner who ordered that monstrous spear? Are you talking about the hero from that whatever battle?"

"Idiot! That's why I say even your brain is made of muscle. Viscount Hardlett, the god of war from Datrohn!"

"That's right, but it's unbelievable that he cut down 200 heavy cavalry."

"I also don't believe the rumors though. But if he swung that around like a windmill, then even if many people came at him, they would end up as piles of corpses."

The pupil was impressed and raised his voice. It is rare for this eccentric boss to acknowledge other people. He's a stubborn geezer who would say that the entire story is just a lie.

"It's amazing, eh?"

"He might come again. Don't be rude! Your head and torso will have a tearful separation."

Rumors are spreading among the citizens, mixing in made-up stories with the truth.



-Aegir POV-

"I've been waiting. Well, let's move on!"

"This is a boxed lunch. Since dried meat will taste dull, why not have this for the first night only?"

I pulled Celia and Irijina along with me on a little journey. I got on Schwartz with my new spear, but he was resisting as if saying 'ah it's heavy', but when Celia was added to the weight, he was obedient. In actual fact, he still has energy to spare, doesn't he? Maybe he really wants to try having Irijina ride on as well?

We head south, down the Goldonia territory, where we will be passing through Erich's territory first. My territory has become the neighbor of his to the south, and the northern part touching Treia kingdom has construction going on to prepare for the highway, but only one section has been completed. I don't know how long it will take for the construction to reach inside my territory.

Also, what I am most concerned with is that the expressions of the villagers in Erich's territory don't look good. When I spoke to him before, he didn't say that he was ruling over them especially harshly, and compared with the rule of the severe Arkland it should be relatively comfortable.

I was curious so I wanted to ask him again. Fortunately, our appearances are those made for traveling, so at a glance, we don't look like feudal lord or nobles. The weapon that I'm holding is extremely dangerous looking, though.

"Hey~, do you have some time?"

"...what, who are you guys?"

A man who looks to be a peasant came to speak with us. His age is around 40, he isn't young, but he isn't old either. It seems like he's growing something.

"You planting? In the middle of winter?"

"They're potatoes. If I grow them now, there will be many that won't turn out good,

but if we're lucky enough we can harvest them before summer. As we are now, we might not have enough to make it past the season."

"That field over there, the planting of the winter wheat hasn't been done yet."

Celia sharply points it out.

"We didn't have enough hands. And by the time the young'uns come back from the war, it would be too cold. We would miss out on the time to sow seeds."

After winning the war, I was not directly affected so I didn't know, but the villages in this area may also be affected by the bad access to traffic.

"But it's not like we can give those guys nothing to eat when they come back. When there are more people, we suffer more."

I see, those returning soldiers are eating meals without helping out with the farm work. I can only say that the timing is bad.

"But, are the taxes lighter than they were during the Arkland days?"

This is more like Arkland was way too out of hand, rather than Erich imposing good laws though. From what I've heard, around 60% was good, and more than 80% believe he's a bad feudal lord. Furthermore, head tax, conscription, labor services and a variety of obligations are imposed.

In Goldonia, 40% head tax is normal, and if necessary, conscription is imposed. The amount of head tax is rather fair compared to Arkland. The feudal lords in other countries have slight differences in amount but are quite similar.

I don't believe Erich strays too far from the standard either so it should become closer to half.

"The tax payments have gotten lighter sure... but the highway maintenance fee, flood control fee and such haven't really changed in the end."

Celia's eyes narrowed. The maintenance of the highway is done by the kingdom, it's not something that Erich should be taxing. He didn't mention anything about the construction of the flood control either.

A new tax cannot be decided without the permission of the feudal lord. However, I am excluded, since I delegated the full authority to Adolph.

“Is that tax payment in kind? Or is it by currency?”

“If it isn’t currency, they won’t take it. There aren’t many merchants here so the prices are marked down and it’s making things unnecessarily difficult.”

Then it’s decided. The crops that are turned into tax are allocated directly to the kingdom or to the preservation of the troops. They are heavy too, so it’s not like the products can be easily moved around. If there is an injustice, then it would be the currency that is going into someone’s pockets.

“But, should we be the ones to speak out?”

Celia is right and this is Erich’s problem in his own territory. We have no authority here. If it is on Erich’s orders that those people are committing injustice, then we can’t do anything about it here. Irijina has given up in various ways and is playing around with Schwartz.

The peasant spoke up thinking that our silence seemed suspicious.

“So, where are you guys going?”

“Rafen.”

The place we are headed to is my territory and the largest town, Rafen. The map that I gave to Adolph also had a circle in this area. Although it’s the largest, the population is only around 400, and the population of my territory altogether in the first place is just 2000 people. It is exactly the case that it is just a large area with nothing around.

“Rafen? You guys and the horse are impressive looking so it won’t be such a long distance but... along the way there might be a barrier. If you get caught then it might be troublesome.”

“What? Barrier?”

My voice came out without thinking. I don’t remember such a thing being set up, and

it's not like Erich created it. I thought it was Adolph for a split second, but if he did something so stupid, I'll throw him out immediately.

"Yeah, depending on the people passing by and the cargo, they have to pay toll. And it seems they might be picking a fight or doing something like extortion."

I guess he's warning me it would be annoying since I'm bringing especially beautiful ladies with me.

But this is perfect. This seems easier to resolve than the issue with the tax.

Seeing me smile, Celia holds her head in her hand, Irijina is thinking about something and one bite of the hard bread was left on the ground. I don't think it's true but even if you plant bread, nothing will grow from it, you know? The goodwill you left behind will just rot and disappear.

We said farewell to the peasant and followed the highway for a while... although saying that is presumptuous (it's a path someone has passed through before), we continued on and just as we were told, there was a soldier holding a spear and a simple fence made of wood left on the road.

"Stop! In order to pass by here, you need to pay a passing fee... you need to pay one silver."

It seems he hasn't decided on the amount. I finally came closer and he wasn't even shady or suspicious.

"I didn't know that there was a passing toll here."

"It's orders from the new feudal lord! Just shut up and follow it!"

"That woman there too! 1 silver, if you can't pay you can also pass through some other method though..."

Celia's expression disappeared. If the soldier touches Celia's body then his neck will instantly be slit. But this won't be solved even if you kill him.

"I know the feudal lord over there, there's no way he would create a barrier."

The soldier appears to panic for an instant but recovered right away.

“We are not soldiers from Viscount Hardlett but soldiers from Count Radhalde. We were told to take tax from those who pass through the territory... here”.

He doesn't know how he should speak to me after hearing that I'm an acquaintance with the feudal lord. There's a limit to telling lies about a barrier being at the end of the territory.

“I will only say this once. Bring the guy who built this barrier without permission at once. If there isn't one, then tell the guy with the highest standing to come.”

The soldiers look at each other, but as expected if they call the head here then they would get yelled at.

“This guy's getting cocky!”

“I don't mind killing you here you know!?”

There was a dull sound. My spear... it was the sound of the handle of my spear being shoved against the soldier's armor.

It wasn't a blade, and it was only the surface of the armor that I hit so his body won't receive any fatal wounds. He just flew backwards, then fainted after rolling around about 5 times.

“He said it was only going to be said once.”

It's helpful that Celia said it. Since I can't open my mouth anymore. The other soldier is hurriedly running to call his superior.



“I am the knight Ebbo, put in charge of this barrier by Count Radhalde! Depending on what you do...”

“What? Continue speaking.”

The superior that came out froze in place. He might recognize my face. I don't know a

guy like this though.

“Th-this is... um what business do you have...”

“I was just going to my territory and there was this barrier. Is there anything else besides that?”

I am already holding my spear. Celia has also unsheathed the sword from her waist, Irijina is carrying her spear too. If a stubborn group of people comes out, we should have no problems killing about 10 of them.

“Er... well, this is the order from Count Radhalde so...”

“Is it? I am close with the Count. It’s easy for me to ask, you know? I could say something like ‘Count, there seems to be a barrier created here.’ That’s it, I’ll be upfront about it, so is it really alright with you?... Knight Hebbo was it?”

“No! This is the order from the acting official, so I can’t say whether the Count knows about it directly or not.”

This is slow. I scoop the feet of this Knight Hebbo, and thrust the end of my spear on his fallen back. The man is squirming but he shouldn’t be able to get up.

“Go quickly. Tell the guy who ordered you that there won’t be a second chance. Next, if I see you again, I’ll crush you like some thief. Got it?”

They dismantled the fence in the blink of an eye, then helped up the fallen soldier.

“This should be resolved right?”

“They won’t do anything unnecessary on the boundaries of my territory... but I can’t change the tax of the people.”

But beyond that, things get complicated and quite annoying. In the first place it’s Erich’s territory, so he’ll do something about it. These corrupt government officials will pop up whenever and wherever like insects, but I’m not suited to menial tasks like crushing these bugs by squishing them one by one.

“But this section of the area – it can be treated as my land.”

“Yes... however, next time it might happen to Aegir-sama’s territory.”

“They’ll be skewered then!”

Irijina reacts. Even so, these women are quite violent.

If they do as they please in my territory, nobody will say anything if they get cut down.

However, I’ve become a little uneasy. The only thing I know about the territory is that I dispatched Adolph and have given him 100 gold. Other than that, I wasn’t interested in the management and stuff of the territory, so I really left it alone. If I go there, it’s not like there wouldn’t be any citizens left right? I’m so worried that I can’t sleep at night.



I can’t sleep, so I’ll pay Irijina a visit at night. We were in a little bit of a rush on the trail, so when it got dark on the way, we simply lined up our tents and slept. I move slowly so I don’t wake up Celia and lie on top of Irijina.

“Nnn... Hey! Hardlett-dono, what are you doing so late at night!?”

Without saying anything, I peel her clothes away, massaging her breasts and sucking her nipples.

“Nnnh! What is it all of a sudden?!”

I don’t answer, sliding her pants to the side and slipping a finger into her hole.

“Wo-would you like to sleep with me or something? You did it so suddenly, I didn’t even bathe.”

It’s true that there is body odor coming from Irijina who hasn’t bathed, but it’s just a few days, moreover, it’s winter so it’s not something that would make my lust disappear. I check how wet she is and prepare myself. The both of us didn’t take off all our clothes, I just peeled Irijina’s tunic to reveal her breasts, and also shifted her pants up to her thighs. For me, I only had my cock out.

“Uoh!”

I was just about to penetrate her but the one who raised their voice was me. All of a sudden, my pants were dropped to below my knees from behind, and a hand reached out towards my balls.

“Is it Celia? What’s wrong?”

“It’s not what’s wrong. You’re mean, starting with just the two of you.”

Celia bit my ass as some sort of punishment. It secretly hurt but it can’t be helped that this happened. It’s still cold, but the three of us were entwined with each other with just our lower halves exposed. If I declared I was going to be connected with them right now then it would feel naughty.

I place Celia on top of Irijina, who was lying on her back, lining up their genitals together and admiring the sight. The difference in their bodies is evident and Celia’s face is at just the right spot to be buried in Irijina’s breasts.

“Ooh, Celia is slender though. It’s an amazing feat that you’re able to go out to battle with that body!”

Irijina caresses Celia’s entire body without reservation.

“Please stop that!... Irijina-san is big though. Your muscles are amazing too, it’s like getting on top of Aegir-sama.”

As if realizing what she said, she turned back to look at me, responding with ‘Aegir-sama feels way better though!!’ I won’t get angry at something like that though.

“Which of you wants it first?”

“Me!”

“How about me first?”

Let’s put it in between the gap in the center of them. I put it in between the area where their genitals are lined up, all the way to their stomachs and start rubbing. The two of them are impatiently wiggling their ass while I massage them and I rub their clits with

my meat rod.

“Aaah! It feels good!”

“Ooh! It’s rubbing my clit!”

Juices start flowing from both their holes and immediately my cock gets wet. Then I push it into Celia just like that. The tip is even thicker than her own clenched fist, while thrusting it in and penetrating her, the cock causes her stomach to expand to its shape. It wouldn’t be strange to hear moans of pleasure but instead, I heard words of welcome.

“Aaah! That sturdy thing came in, I’m so happy!”

Celia may also be happy that she took first priority and she’s shaking her hips while bouncing around. I feel bad for leaving Irijina alone so I’ll put a finger inside and rub somewhere nice. The two asses are squirming, they are letting out moans and their juices are spraying. I enjoy stirring the insides of the girls for a while but I thought of something good.

“Irijina, lift Celia up. From the back.”

“Like this?”

Irijina grabs both thighs and easily lifts Celia up. Celia struggles but having her legs grabbed, she can’t move much, so she gave up and entrusted her back against her chest. In that position, I once again thrust my cock into Celia’s vagina. Celia was lifted up and pressed in between us while I was slamming my cock into her.

“Uwa! Don’t push me. It’ll go in deeper!”

I match my movements with Irijina and thrust my hips as if trying to lift Celia.

“No matter how many times I see it, it’s amazing, your stomach is full and I can tell the shape of his cock... are you sure it doesn’t feel painful?”

“It’s painful but it feels good!”

Celia answers Irijina’s question with a melted expression.

Let's finish off the agonizing Celia.

"Irijina, put your finger in Celia's ass. Do it slowly and don't hurt her."

Irijina ignores Celia's silent screams and sinks her finger in her ass. And although I told her to do it gently, she did it with quite the momentum. Maybe such a boorish girl can't do such minute adjustments.... really, now she's putting 3 fingers in all of a sudden.

"Aaaaaaaaaa-!!"

The cock attacks deep in her hole, the fingers enter her ass harshly, and I steal her lips and touch her nipples while Irijina is kissing her neck. All of the stimulations became a mess, causing Celia to thrash wildly and letting out screams like some sort of monster.

"Aaaahh-!! Aaahh-!!"

Celia is moaning unusually like a beast, I thought the liquid that got on me was urine but it's female ejaculation from being broken. And after some time of screaming, Celia leaned against me and after kissing my lips, she fainted. She loves getting kisses after sexual intercourse and she will definitely seek them from me, then she looks so happy when she falls asleep after doing it.

Even so, the climax this time was amazing. Perhaps her weak spot is her ass. As expected, if I put my cock in there, her colon will break, so I'll just thrust my fingers in there.

"Ooh, marvelous. It was an incredible voice."

"Oh yeah, it was the first time that we attacked Celia together. She was unexpectedly into it too, so do you want to try doing it with her next time?"

"Muu, I don't prefer to sleep with girls... but I'll comply if it's Hardlett-dono's orders."

It might be wonderful to watch the two women caress each other while enjoying some alcohol. Once I get turned on, I'll insert it in them and it would be twice as delicious.

“By the way, I haven’t cum yet... Hardlett-dono doesn’t seem to have released your seed either, so will you give me some affection?”

Of course, I don’t have any objections but in the past, Celia will remain hugging me even after losing consciousness. She’s asleep so she isn’t conscious but her limbs are tightly wrapped around me. Can’t be helped I guess, let’s just do it like this.

I hug the clinging Celia and have sex with Irijina. At first, it was difficult, but feeling my body temperature rising, Celia was talking in her sleep and whispered ‘I love you’ and ‘screw me more please’ in my ear and those words turned me on, helping me release a lot of more than usual.

Celia, who’s the smallest, and Irijina, who is large, have pretty good compatibility with each other. There will be opportunities for them to head into battle together too, I can expect some fun combination-play between them. I held Irijina in one arm, who is shooting my seed back out like a water gun, and sleep while kissing Celia, who is seeking them on top of my stomach.



The next day

“It looks like the citizens have scattered so we don’t have to worry.”

Celia points to the front while saddled on the horse. The scarf that she eagerly wrapped around her neck is to hide the kiss marks around her neck.

In a village located a little before Rafen, the villagers are gathered to do something. It doesn’t look like they were farming, but for a small village, quite a considerable amount of people are moving about.

“Sorry. Do you have a minute?”

“What’s up? You a traveler?”

I ask a middle-aged woman who looks like a farmhand.

“Something like that. I’m heading to Rafen. So, what are you doing?”

“We’re making compost and soil. It’s not like we’re rushing but well, we do it whenever we can.”

I don’t know much about farm work. But this village is different from the one at Erich’s place and the villagers are cheerful. Geographically, it shouldn’t be much different from Erich’s territory though.

“The north part seems to be struggling somewhat, is this village alright?”

The woman seems a little hesitant to talk about the village’s condition. A small village like this hates strangers. There is also the fact that tax collectors and investigators might pay them a visit to talk to them personally like this.

But as expected, she probably wouldn’t think I’m a tax collector, seeing as how I’m bringing two women along with me and holding such a large spear. The woman started to talk.

“Well the thing is, a short while ago, the acting official of the new feudal lord came, and he said that we won’t be taking the head tax for this spring!”

“Wha-!!”

Celia reacts, but it would complicate things if she were to shout so I cover her mouth.

“Moreover, the tax for the fall harvest will be reduced to 20%! When the soldiers return, the food cost will normally increase, so we have been reserving food for the tax, but since we were told that we could eat it up, we can manage now.”

“Wh-wh-wh-!! Nguh!”

Celia is getting even wilder, so I stuff my fingers in her mouth.

“Also, there are various labor tasks to do, but it seems they’ll pay us in gold. If it isn’t just for work, then the men are going to Rafen every time they are hiring. And there are still many things to do at home in the winter.”

The acting official of the new feudal lord is definitely Adolph. The faces of the villagers are so cheerful that they couldn’t be compared to those in Erich’s territory, they don’t have any impression of starving. I’d say he’s doing quite well, isn’t he?

“By the way, mister, that girl seems to have melted there but could you not start in the village?”

Before I knew it, my fingers have been stirring around inside her mouth. Celia has completely become obedient, but she didn't want to return to her own horse. It can't be helped, I'll have her ride with me.

“Aegir-sama... give it to me please...”

Celia undid the drawstring on her pants while riding Schwartz and grabbed my hand, guiding it to her crotch. First, we will meet with Adolph in Rafen, then we can talk after that. I stir around Celia's vagina, and we continue on our horses while she writhes in agony.

Protagonist: Aegir Hardlett 20 years old Winter

(Traditional age reckoning)

Status: Goldonia Kingdom Viscount. Eastern Independent Army Commander.

Feudal Lord of Arkland Southeast Area.

Assets: 795 gold (silver and below not counted)

Weapons: Dual Crater (large sword), Custom-made large spear

Equipment: Black Cloak (Cursed), Simple leather armor

Family: Nonna (wife), Carla (concubine), Mel (concubine), Sue (daughter),

Melissa, Maria, Rita, Kuu, Ruu, Catherine (commuting)

Servants: Sebastian, Miti, Alma, Kroll, Nina

Subordinates: Celia (adjutant), Irijina (private army commander),

Leopolt (army commander), Schwartz (horse), Adolph (domestic affairs official)

Sexual Partners: 39, persons who got pregnant: 6

CHAPTER 59

DOMESTIC AFFAIRS OFFICIAL AND THE MIGRATING CITIZENS

Once Celia and I arrive in Rafen, Irijina heads straight into the building that looks like the feudal lord's mansion.

"Welcome, thanks for coming. I have received your notice and made preparations for your arrival."

Adolph has set up camp at the previous feudal lord's mansion. He specially set up an annex close-by to live in, in preparation for my arrival at any time.

"Well~, I didn't hear from you so I thought you forgot about me."

Sorry, I actually forgot.

"I was actually going to send a messenger or something to visit you, but as I thought, the Viscount has something for me right?"

As usual, he is flattering me or maybe he's making fun of me. Either way, I can't understand this guy.

"Aside from that, I heard from the villagers that you decided to exempt them from the head tax, and the tax on their harvest is 20%. Is that the truth?"

Celia didn't even drink the tea she took out and was ready to flare up. Recently, Celia has been reading every day and has collected a variety of books from somewhere gaining an unexpected amount of knowledge.

"Yes. That's true."

Adolph answered with a smile as usual.

"What are your intentions? The tax from the citizens is Aegir-sama's precious income and you just decided to change that on your own; are you spoiling the citizens so that

you can get popular!?”

Hm, it's true that the expense in this area is continuing. Up until now, I have been receiving rewards from the king so I wasn't strapped for cash, but after receiving the territory, it's normal for me to manage on my own.

“First, it was natural for me to decide things on my own. Aegir-sama has authorized me to do things like this.”

Adolph is imitating the way I usually speak. He's definitely the type of person who is hated by his superiors.

“He told me to make the citizens as rich as possible and make whatever decisions I wanted until he gets there. Then he gave me 100 gold and told me to produce the best results, so I was doing just that. I haven't created any debts at all either.”

He smiled, adding on that the citizens are in better shape than those in the north in Lord Radhalde's territory. It's true that he's not wrong, I remember saying those things.

But Celia is not convinced. He hasn't used the money inappropriately but exempting and reducing tax is close to breaking the rules. The diligent Celia has no reason to acknowledge him.

“Even an idiot can say that the citizens will be happier if you simply reduce the tax!”

“This territory is poor. If we return the tax as we have taken it, it won't develop as we wish.”

“That doesn't matter. Even if you don't return it to the people, it still becomes Aegir-sama's income!”

Adolph looked at Celia then to me, his expression seems to be saying ‘good grief’.

“That is why I decided to increase the number of mothers. First I will lower the tax so that I can stabilize the disarrayed lifestyles of the people due to the war. Next, I thought about our expenses; If we increase the size of the farmland and amount of harvest, what would happen?”

“We would just lose money then!”

Celia is still flaring up at him.

“Wrong. In order for the other territories to profit from occupying them, they are imposing taxes, and our territory is the only one with light taxes and abundant land. If you were a farmer, where would you want to live?”

In order to increase the population, you are encouraging the couples at night. However, it would still take at least 15 years to see the fruits of that. Does Adolph plan to accumulate farmers from the neighboring lands? It seems it is for that reason he puts out a ‘signboard’ to tell them that taxes are exempted and reduced.

“But most of the feudal lords forbid immigrants. It will be useless if the farmers can’t come.”

For any feudal lord, it isn’t a good thing for farmers to leave their territory. It is normal for this to be strictly enforced, and if they cross over to their destination, it could turn into a war.

“That’s why I’m doing it now. During the time that things are calming down, and just before things start settling down. Right now, it’s hard to determine whether those that have died in war and those that ran away with their lives are refugees or not, since they haven’t settled down yet.”

Adolph left a copy of a thick book in front of me.

“This is something I made. Starting with Rafen, it’s an account of the citizens living in the surrounding villages. I have collected the information of where everybody lives and put it together. But it’s still incomplete and has to be revised eventually. The reason is that Arkland’s former ruling class instantly disappeared, so the information we have is inaccurate and the only way of confirming the people who aren’t there is to ask those who live in the area.”

“Amazing...”

Celia flips through the book. Listed there are the residents’ name and house, even age and family composition is mentioned. In some places, there is just a name listed, and a question mark was written for those whose details could not be confirmed. There

are also many whose names are crossed out with a line; they are mentioned but have actually died due to war or famine.

“Please look at this extremely inaccurate resident record. This is something that I did and nobody else can do.”

He’s speaking in a way that I can hear some arrogance, but being able to present something like this in such a short period, he is certainly talented. If it was me, I would have torn out one page and written Celia’s name on everything. Like Celia 1, Celia 2, Celia revised, or something.

“So that brings us to now. Even now the feudal lords of the neighboring territories do not have a grasp over all the residents in their own occupied land. If some families went missing, they wouldn’t know. If it was discovered by other people and they started protesting to us, if we are also confused, it would remain unknown.”

“Mumumu...”

Celia groans. Once she saw the book, she realized that her knowledge is not at a level where she could clash with Adolph, who has been doing this for many years. Irijina, meanwhile, seems to have stopped thinking somewhere in the middle. The biscuits that were brought out were all eaten by herself, and now she’s eyeing Celia’s tea.

“Talking about the issue regarding income, it is the same to take 40% from 100 people and to take 20% from 200 people.”

Well, I guess that’s true.

“But if we are in a hurry, and need to demand money, it is much easier to increase the tax from 20% to 30% rather than 40% to 50%. There will also be a large growth in income. It will only be for a brief period where we experience loss, but the day will come eventually when we will be smiling!”

Adolph unusually puts some energy into things and emphasizes the point.

(Then I think I should let him do it. Rather than letting me manage the territory with a half-assed understanding, it is better for him to guide it to a better direction.)

“I understand. Let’s do it according to your plan. Let me know if something happens.”

It seems Adolph is surprised that I didn't refer to any specific tax rates or policies.

"Didn't I say I would leave it to you? If there is something that must be prioritized over your ideas, then I'll take back control and give out orders, so until then you can do as you like."

"Thank you very much. Then I have something to discuss right away."

"Hm, what is it?"

"Currently we are using the gold to hire the villagers and they are engaging in flood control and maintenance of the small roads. This is causing them to actively participate in labor as well as giving the villagers some income..."

"I understand. Just tell me what you want me to do."

"I'm running low on money. So please give me some more."

I'm thankful for the uneventful summary so far.

"How much do you need?"

"As much as you are willing, if it's 100 gold it would be sufficient, and if it's 1000 gold it would also be satisfactory."

I want to hand it to him generously, but I actually don't have much to spare. I also need the expenses for all the women to move here. It's my territory so we can do something about the house, but it's not like we can live poorly.

The upcoming wedding ceremony will be the most expensive too. With Nonna as the legal wife, and Carla and Mel as the concubine, I will be setting up a ceremony for the three of them altogether.

I'm not going to throw a party and invite all the nobles, but I intend to hold a grand ceremony for ourselves. Mel and Carla were satisfied with just saying the vows, but my beloved wife Nonna looked at me with tears in her eyes. Recently, she has been crying a lot in front of me.

“She’s smiling! This woman, she’s looking down and smiling!!”

That’s what Carla said, but when I looked at her, I could only see Nonna covering her face and trying to hold back her tears. These girls actually get along well, so it would be nice if they got along with each other more on a regular basis.

She’s getting a wedding ceremony after her house was destroyed, and after she fell into slavery and gave up. It seems like it’s a woman’s happiness so it’s fine to let her have a little luxury. So, I was thinking that I need an appropriate amount of money to hold the wedding ceremony. Instead of giving it to citizens I don’t even know, it’s obvious that I would rather make my own women happy with the money.

“Sorry, but because of various things I can’t give you that much. I’ll give you double the original amount, 200 gold.”

It’s not like I normally carry several hundred gold with me anywhere I go, so I promised that I would send it to him at a later date.

“Thank you.”

Adolph doesn’t say a single complaint. I guess he does things if it’s there and doesn’t if it’s not.

“Is that alright with you? Giving such a large sum...”

“I don’t mind. Right now I only need the money for the wedding ceremony. I think I’ll be able to set up quite a grand ceremony with about 500 gold.”

“That is actually useless.... Nonna-san is really a spendthrift.”

If I wasn’t a man who was prepared to accept that much, then I wouldn’t be able to get her beauty and her giant breasts in my hands.

Oh right, I didn’t come here just to listen to Adolph. I forgot one of my goals for this trip.

“Anyway, I’ll become the commander of the eastern independent army but I am also planning to establish a private army... can I take some people?”

Even as it is, there is not enough people or funds, so it might be a bad time.

Adolph thought about it for a little and hit his hand.

“Shouldn’t that be fine? There have been reports of a group of impersonating thieves too, and maintaining the peace will also affect the attractiveness of the land. Also...”

“What is it? Say it clearly.”

“The army has nothing to do if there aren’t enemies around. So I had them perform civil engineering since it would be no different from hiring laborers. Unlike the temporarily employed farmers, their ability will also improve, so you can expect a lot from them as elites.”

What can they do as elite civil engineers? First, if there are no enemies then they should be training. If the army does nothing but civil engineer work, then won’t they just be a group of laborers?

I’ll discuss that part with Irijina. She’s a stupid child, but has an abundance of experience being in the army. The training and the application of their labor should be done decently with her in charge.

“Irijina, it’s fine if you do something small first but make a prototype private army for me. I’ll make it an expense to Adolph to manage it somehow, can you do it?”

“Leave it to me! Even if you say construction, the requirement is the same in building camps. It’s an essential skill in the army!”

With that, I did everything I could for now.

“Next is to at least have a look around the territory. Irijina, come with me too. If possible I will also do some scouting for my private army there.”

“Alright!”

“Yes.”



With the two of us, we dropped by several villages in different places but all of them seem to have similar situations. There isn't a large population and they are living not-so-abundant lives. But there was no despair on their faces, and they aren't struggling to eat.

When we said we were recruiting for an army in Rafen, we got unexpectedly good responses. Different from the Arkland days, the rewarded wages are large.

"With this, then the citizens may actually come flowing in."

"Yes, but is it alright? With the 200 gold and the expense for the wedding ceremony, thinking of our move, we will have nothing left on hand right?"

"I don't mind. I don't have a hobby of surrounding myself with money."

If I run out, then I'll think about it at that time.

"And also, it might save me for a little bit..."

"What are you talking about?"

No, it's nothing. Let's not have unrealistic expectations.



I look around, informing the people of my plans to assemble an army, and show my face as the feudal lord. I repeat those actions, and around the time when I was going to return to Rafen, I heard an unusual sound.

"Aegir-sama!"

"A battle-!"

Celia and Irijina also listens carefully. There is no mistaking it, this is the sound of blades clashing and a person's scream.

"They are sounds of a fight."

Everyone held their weapons and completed their preparations quickly. We can not see it directly, but it isn't far away. It's inside a thinly spread forest.

"How many people can you do?"

"I can do 2... 5 people!"

(Don't push yourself, 2 people it is.)

"I can take up to 5 people!"

Irijina is a soldier, she won't say something random. She should actually be fine with 5 people.

"This is a part of maintaining peace. Don't let the bandits escape. Crush them."

"Yessir!"

"Yeah!"

With me at the front, Celia close beside me, and Irijina a little bit behind me, we line up our horses and charge in. Let's test out how comfortable it is to fight with this new spear.



-Third Person/Immigrant POV-

"I'm begging you, please stop! We don't have anything you want to steal-!"

"No way, there's lots here. The cart and also tonight's dinner... and maybe your nice ass too."

"Dammit, everyone run away. Break through them!"

There is no god in this world. I have never felt that as much as I did today.

It was a few days ago that we abandoned the village and decided to migrate. The ones

who destroyed our hope of rebuilding the field destroyed by the war was the ones occupying us... the acting official who came from Treia kingdom.



“The tax during the time of harvest is 40%, the same for our county, but you guys have taken up battle expenses during the war, so as compensation I’ll have you offer a special tax for 3 years!”

Everyone screamed. Thinking about the new tax, it would not be any different from the burden they had before. For the amount of damage that was done to the fields during war time, your lifestyle suffered that much more... no, you could no longer survive.

“If we cannot rebuild our fields then we cannot offer the tax. Please grant us with some deferment!”

The village chief desperately pleaded to the acting official but his reaction was cold.

“Shut up! We are the ones who freed you guys from the political pressure. It’s only natural for you to pay the compensation! The people of Arkland are quite impudent along with the former king!”

The escort of the acting official kicked away the village chief.

“Listen! If you default on a payment then we can sell you guys off to retrieve the war expenses. So don’t crawl around here and get to work immediately!”

We worked frantically but during the worst season of winter, my friends went down one by one. Even still, we could not possibly pay off the head tax in spring. Within this despair, I heard a single rumor.

“In the eastern Goldonia territory, it seems that Viscount Hardlett is accepting immigrants into his territory. There isn’t a head tax for spring, and I heard that the harvest tax is many levels cheaper.”

In the end, it was just a rumor, normally it is unthinkable for you to abandon the village you have lived in for many years. But we had no choice anymore. At this rate we will starve to death until spring and die, even if we survive how will the acting official treat

the village that can pay the tax...

I know that Goldonia is an abundant country. So we decided to bet on that chance.

With a few dozen volunteers, we loaded the bare minimum of supplies needed to survive onto a single cart and headed east. And we were on the way to Rafen, where the feudal lord was supposed to be, but we were attacked by bandits in the forest.

“Fight! Protect the women and kids!”

“Nobody will blame you even if you kill the immigrants! Go as wild as you want!!”

There were several returning soldiers among us, and we also had farming tools, such as hoes, so we are able to resist, but the bandits number around 20. We won't be able to defend very well. I stopped praying to the gods and closed my eyes. The next thing that should be coming is either the pain of getting stabbed, or the feeling of the bandits tearing my clothes off.

“Gyaaa!!”

I hear an incredible shout. I immediately wanted to cover my ears but we don't have any companions whose voice is so vulgar.

When I open my eyes slightly, the bandit who was looking at me pervertedly earlier was sitting down close by. I wanted to scream, but when I looked carefully, he wasn't sitting down. He was missing his lower half.

“Who the heck are you?!!”



-Aegir POV-

Without giving a reply, I smashed his head open. In addition, I cut off the hand that was holding the sword, after giving my spear a spin, and several people flew back. The fortunate ones are able to stand back up after rolling around, but the unlucky ones crashed into the trees and died.

“This feels comfortable to use.”

A new spear produces the best results. It's sturdy so it can naturally be used roughly, and it's also heavier than the previous one, so even if the blade isn't used to cut, enemies can still be defeated. It's also nice that the entire thing is long. Although if Lucy's scent was on it, then it would be the best...

"It might also increase my own strength-!"

The intense thrust enters one of them through the chest, piercing through the leather armor, and the blade protrudes out from the other side. I outmuscle the man, who was stabbed and was desperately grabbing the spear, and pull it out of him. The man let out an agonizing cry of death before dancing in the air, causing blood to rain down on myself and on the companions around me.

"What a guy..."

"Is he a monster-?!"

There are five corpses around my feet. Their fighting spirit is vanishing.

"The sixth person."

The man sneakily circling behind me got a huge spear thrust right through the front of his face, and his face disappeared. I was going to toss him back and return him to his friends below while he was still stabbed, but when I lifted him up, his head tore off and it became a mess. Well, are they still going to come?

"Well, there are still 10 people left though?"

I smile and tried to invite them, but nobody came. These are some cowardly guys.

"Shit! We can't do anything about that!"

The bandits were about to withdraw, but they spotted Celia who was close to me.

"Get that small one, use it as a shield!"

The men are approaching Celia, who got off her horse and is getting ready for a melee. Long swords are swung and war hammers are slammed down, but Celia swiftly

evades, sweeping their legs with her sword.

“Gyaa!!”

“My legs!!”

With Celia’s arm strength, it is difficult to pierce through armor and to send heads flying. But their legs weren’t protected, so if you slash the flesh on their thighs, then they won’t be able to stand anymore. They can only fall and wait for someone to finish them off – a pathetic existence.

Just when Celia was about to stab the necks of the two men rolling on the ground, a sword swung at her from behind. She instantly blocks it, but perhaps it was due to the difference in body size, she got pushed back. Seeing his chance, the man swung his sword, but Celia dropped a sword, rolling it below the man’s crotch.

“Tch-!You bitch... aaah... Aaaah... Aaaaaaaaah!!!”

Up until now, it was the loudest scream. Celia’s short sword stabbed the man’s crotch.

It probably got pushed up when it was rolling around. Celia has knives hidden in various places all over her body after all. The man had his precious place stabbed and it dug in all the way to his stomach, which without a doubt is a fatal injury. Blood bubbled up from his mouth and the man fell over.

It looks like Celia will be fine. When I shift my attention to Irijina, as expected, she was rampaging about.

“Fuun-!Sei-!”

The tip of her spear was so fast that you could barely see it. As soon as they stepped forward, her spear dug into their chest and necks, and they fall down one by one.

“How’s this! This shitty woman!”

One person grabbed the spear and held his companion who got stabbed by Irijina. If the tip of the spear gets grabbed then you won’t be able to do anything. But he’s looking down on Irijina.

“Uuuwaa!!”

Irijina lifts the spear along with the man who grabbed it. Surprised, he let go of his hands in midair and a ferocious strike befell the sacrifice. Penetrating the chest along with the armor, the man was thrown away, getting impaled by the branches of a dead tree.

As I thought, she's strong. She also has technique, but compared to an inept man, she has more arm strength suitable to match her large frame. Even on the bed, when I am doing her along with the other girls, I need to be cautious. From my intense attacks, Irijina forgot and nearly squeezed Maria to death with her hug. Celia is skillful so she should be able to dodge it.

Using the strength unimaginable from her usual idiotic behavior, Irijina has already slaughtered the promised 5 people. While she was twirling her spear with such speed, it was not easy to approach her, but due to the long reach of her thrusts, some of the bandits who kept their distance also got killed.

“It-it's no good already!”

“Run away!”

The three of us have already killed over half of their companions, and the bandits started to run away. But we had no intention of letting them do so. If we let them run away, then they will once again commit wrongdoings in my territory. We will not let such an opportunity escape.

I get on Schwartz and chase after them. The difference in speed is evident, and I catch up instantly. I guess Schwartz doesn't like it when I swing my spear on top of him, because before I was able to, he trampled over the enemies one after the other. A human's body is not able to withstand the weight of a large one ton horse riding over them, and they were crushed like rotten fruit.

Celia's knife stabs the back of the head of the last man, and the bandits are exterminated.



-Aegir POV-

"We took those guys out. You don't have to worry anymore."

(The ones who got attacked were immigrants, huh... it seems they were immediately drawn by the signboard that Adolph put up.)

"Th-thank you very much! We are, um, on a journey so!"

They think I'm a knight or something and are desperately trying to deceive me, since abandoning your home village is something unforgivable.

"I have no interest in where you guys come from. There are injured people aren't there? Let's hurry and go."

I don't know which village I should be leading them to. Let's just take them back to Rafen and have Adolph look after them. He also wanted to have a grasp on the citizens anyway.

"Excuse me for asking, but who are you?"

A woman who got on the cart calls out to me. She's young and has nicely defined features, but she's too thin.

"I'm Hardlett. I'm the feudal lord over here so I won't lead you into a trap. Relax and follow me."

The villagers were surprised, all of them were going to kneel but I stopped them. I just want to get back quickly.

"It's fine so hurry up, get ready and leave. To get to Rafen... guess we'll have to wait a night."

The sun is already setting. If we push our horses, we can get there, but it would be impossible to take them along on foot.

"What can we do to thank you... We have nothing to repay you with though..."

The woman lowered her head very deeply. You have something to give me. Why don't I take it while I'm at it.

"Nnmh!"

I immediately kiss the girl, inserting my tongue in too. The woman was resisting slightly in the beginning, but thinking that it was bad to oppose me and that having her mouth sucked is quite cheap to compensate for her life, she obediently surrendered her body.

The kiss continued for 10 more minutes, and the woman's hips gave out, but I put my leg between her crotch and forcibly support her. In addition to that, I push her body against a nearby tree, twisting my tongue in as deep as I can. While I'm at it, I might as well suck her mouth until we are ready to depart.

The kiss continued for another 10 minutes, the treatment of the injured seems to be over so I finish things up. When I separated with the woman's lips, she had a sad face, leaving her mouth open and her tongue stuck out, but we have to hurry out to the plains and get ready to camp for the night. There is possibility that wolves, bears and even monsters to come out at night in the forest.

"No way, leaving me like this after all that."

The woman seems reluctant, but Celia pulled her along with an expressionless face and threw her onto the cart. I sighed and looked at my knee where I supported her crotch, seeing a wet stain made there. I'm sure the woman's crotch is flooding, what a waste I guess.



At night, we camp in the relatively safe plains, but we planned to return within the day so we didn't bring anything. The immigrants shouldn't have very much equipment themselves, so we warmed the meat and food on the bonfire, gathered around and slept.

While sleeping, I hear the sound of someone stepping on grass near my feet. When I wake up, I see the earlier woman. I'm not such an idiot to ask something so obvious like what she was doing here.

“...Go ahead.”

The woman spread her legs shoulder-width apart while still standing. From where I was sleeping, I can glance at the important parts using the light from the bonfire. If I look carefully, juices were sticking to her thighs.

“You couldn’t bear it?”

“You tease... don’t say it please...”

I sit cross-legged and open the front of my pants, taking out my cock which is still soft.

“Get it erect for me.”

The woman sits in between my legs and grabs my cock with both her hands, rubbing it up and down. It seems that she has absolutely no experience, and servicing me with her mouth is inconceivable to her. It’s a little soon but her technique filled with sexual desire has gotten me excited and my cock gets hard quickly. The woman is surprised and stands up to look at my cock.

“It’s alright now, come.”

She sits back down and grabs the rod.

“Please be gentle.”

The woman gets on top of me while I’m cross-legged and lowers her hips as if sitting down, but she seems to be struggling with the size. She’s trying her best to push it against her vagina, but the tip of my cock is as large as her fist so it isn’t going in that well. I help her out a little bit, picking her up and dropping her hips.

“Aaah-!!”

A sharp scream rings out, and the woman’s body convulses. My cock pierces her completely into the deepest part, blood dripping from where we are connected. Looking at the amount of bloodshed, her insides aren’t injured, it’s probably just the blood from her virginity tearing.

Worried about the voice, I look over at where Celia and Irijina are, but it seems they are tired from fighting and they are sleeping quite soundly. Just in case, I had her bite my shoulder to cover her mouth, and then move my hips.

I move my hips as I like as I remain sitting, while the woman moans, leaving her bite marks on my shoulder in agony.

“Aauu... uuuu.”

Tears start filling her eyes. It's not like she doesn't like being called at night to be embraced, so maybe she's enduring the pain from being deflowered.

“Feel the sensation of my hands.”

I place my hands on her butt and slowly rub her through her clothes. Her waist, her stomach, her breasts, her neck, then her face. When I reached her face, I kissed her and lowered my hands once again. My other hand is already doing her breasts, rubbing them roughly together with the cloth.

“...aau... nnh...”

Her expression relaxes, and although it was just a little, she's starting to leak pleasure-filled voices. It seems it's fine if I move my hips too.

“The pain has disappeared... You are really skilled, aren't you.”

“I don't prefer to hurt women.”

When we kiss, she once again bites my shoulder. This time is not to hold back from screaming, it's to prevent her moans from waking those around us. When she whispers 'you're such a wonderful person' in my ear, my hips start moving more intensely.

Eventually I reach my limit. To decide what I should do, I look at the woman's face, but I don't want to dampen her mood, since she is enjoying her first cock to her heart's content and even using her hips. She's a woman who hid herself and came, so she should also be somewhat prepared, thus I decide to ejaculate inside of her just like this.

“Show me your breasts.”

I only said that much and suck on her lips. The woman who was embraced with her clothes still on, flipped up her shirt and exposed her breasts, and without delay I grab them. It feels good to fondle a woman’s breasts while ejaculating.

I squeeze her breasts, and the instant she feels a little pain and her body shivers, my seed shoots out into her womb vigorously.

“Uu-! ooooh...”

“Aah-!Aaaaaa...”

Our growing voices disappeared softly, and her womb was filled with my seed juices. Once I finished ejaculating, the woman slowly stands up, bows once to me, and wobbles back to her own sleeping place. Following the woman’s steps, a trail of drops of pink-colored juices was left behind.

This time, I was able to take her virginity and embrace her without causing her too much pain. Thinking about it, I actually had quite the number of virgins as partners. I stretch a little, and after my work is done, I put my cock away and try to fall asleep once again.

At that time, Celia who was pretending to sleep, got her revenge on the snoring Irijina by stuffing her nose with dead leaves. The deed caused by her fit of anger was accompanied with a large sneeze and she was compensated with saliva being plastered on her face.

Protagonist: Aegir Hardlett 20 years old Winter

(Traditional age reckoning)

Status: Goldonia Kingdom Viscount. Eastern Independent Army Commander.

Feudal Lord of Arkland Southeast Area

Assets: 95 gold (silver and below not counted)

Weapons: Dual Crater (large sword), Custom-made large spear

Equipment: Black Cloak (Cursed), Simple leather armor

Family: Nonna (wife), Carla (concubine), Mel (concubine), Sue (daughter),

Melissa, Maria, Rita, Kuu, Ruu, Catherine (commuting)

Servants: Sebastian (butler), Miti, Alma, Kroll, Nina

Subordinates: Celia (adjutant), Irijina (private army commander),

Leopolt (army commander), Schwartz (horse), Adolph (domestic affairs official)

Sexual Partners: 40, number of children born: 6

CHAPTER 60

WEDDING

I punished the bandits, saved the immigrants, took the young woman's virginity, then sent them to Rafen. I think I did an admirable job as a feudal lord. I'll let Adolph do something about the rest.

"It's too dangerous to go by yourself to take out the bandits with your spear!"

Celia is such a worrywart.

"No, it's wonderful! That is exactly the model of a fine feudal lord – using your own spear to work and protect the citizens. This is exactly a noble's dream!"

Irijina's voice is too loud. The people are getting surprised and wondering what's going on.

The girl from yesterday must have been tired since she didn't come along, and just got on the cart. When our eyes met, her face turns red and she hangs her head.

Since it was interesting, I smiled at her and she waved while looking down.

"Ahem."

Celia comes to block my field of vision. As punishment, I rub her ass in front of the people.



Rafen Feudal Lord's mansion (temporary)

"Hoh, right away?"

"I saved these immigrants from bandits, do something about the rest."

I handed off the immigrants to Adolph; he recorded their names, family compositions,

and ages, and it seems that he will set up a new village for them.

“In a rural village, families have strong bonds with their relatives, so it wouldn’t yield good results if you throw them into an already existing village. If I set up a new village, then there won’t be any strangers.”

Several people – returning soldiers and immigrants – have already entered and are getting ready to establish a village.

“In regards to the new village, they will be exempted from head tax, as well as harvest tax until they get to the actual harvest.”

It’s impossible to tell them to pay the harvest tax if we leave them in the open field with nothing. This is reasonable, but even without having to pay tax, they are penniless and can’t even afford to buy food to eat.

“Their village will be established close to Rafen. During the interval between farming periods, I’ll have them perform various labor and pay them in wages and provide them with food supplies. We will place this village with Rafen as the center point and nurture this town to become the logistics base.”

I see, they will have to work hard, but they won’t starve, so in order for them to get comfortable, they’d have to hurry and create a field and raise some crops. He’s given this quite some thought.



“...I’ll have you do as the above. As for the labor, the men will do civil engineering like flood control, and the women will tailor clothes~”

Adolph explains to the people, who quietly listen, what they will be doing from now on but, when he was about to finish talking, the woman I embraced yesterday whispered something in Adolph’s ear.

“Unfortunately, as the acting official, I am unable to understand about that job. Maybe you should ask the adjutant or the person in question?”

Celia heard the word adjutant and glared at the woman, causing her to stand down. What on earth was that about?

When Celia went off to check on the condition of the town, I took the opportunity to call Adolph and asked him secretly.

“Well, she asked if there is a job to sleep with the feudal lord?”

It goes without saying that she’s correct. There is certainly such a job, and I also welcome her to do so. But somehow Celia caught wind of yesterday’s incident, and she told her off on the spot and chased her out.

In any case, they have found a way to live on. It would be fortunate if this doesn’t result in a bad aftertaste. That woman – it’s a little bit of a waste but I didn’t even get her name.

“There are also some hopefuls for the private army! Although there are only 10 people or less.”

In the Arkland days, Irijina was a commander of over 100 people, so as expected, this would make her lonely.

“Adolph, until we can gather a certain number of people for the private army, I don’t mind if you use them exclusively for civil engineering... let’s see, if it gets over 50 people, send over a messenger.”

This is to be expected after a war, as there are also jobs as laborers, there are not many who would purposely choose the dangerous job of becoming a soldier. This will surely take some time. Christoph and Mack seem to want to come and follow me, so it would be fine to send them here a little early. Mack’s strength will also likely show its true value in civil engineering.

“So is Hardlett-sama going back to the capital?”

“Yeah, I also have to prepare for the wedding. I was originally supposed to introduce you as a subordinate too, though.”

“I don’t mind. I will congratulate you from here.”

During such an important time, even if just for a little bit, it wouldn’t be good if Adolph left the town.

“To me, Hardlett-sama is just a person who gives out gold and sleeps in the capital and that’s... no, that’s rude of me.”

“If you’re going to say that, then you were almost food for the zombies in the underground prison.”

Adolph is skilled, so he’ll manage somehow with the territory management. Next, I’ll have to make my beloved women happy.



Two weeks later, Goldonia Capital

The cold season still continues, but it feels a little warmer than before. From now on, every day will be easier for us to live.

Beside me, Nonna cuddles against me as if she’s stuck to me, and Carla and Mel are one step behind us. All of them are wearing beautiful dresses that would make anyone turn their head and stare.

Only the four of us are in this ancient temple located in the capital... Nonna says that this is a temple where you pray to the god of love. We take an oath in front of the statue.

“I swear that I will love this woman forever.”

“I swear that I will love this man forever.”

We kiss, and Nonna steps down for a moment as Carla steps forward.

“I swear that I will love this woman forever.”

“I swear that I’ll get pregnant with this man’s child lots.”

Nonna slumps and collapses. But in the middle of such a sacred ritual, she can’t do anything so she endures it.

Mel is next.

“I swear that I will love this woman forever.”

“I swear that I will love this man forever, no matter what, and I swear that I will offer every part of my body.”

Nonna snorts. A ritual of marriage is freedom, I guess.

And so the vows are all over. In front of the god of love, the concerned parties swore their love. This is the entirety of the wedding.

It seems that the gods will only appear at marriages that are more ceremonious.

So why do we need to do so much preparation and pay so much for this wedding ceremony?

“Well, let’s return home. Everyone is already waiting for us.”

It’s because we invited acquaintances to our house, and while announcing that they are beautiful brides, we will celebrate by having ingredients and alcohol of the highest class.



“Cheers to the beautiful brides!”

“Cheers to the beautiful ladies!”

“To the breasts that are too big!”

Erich takes the lead, Bruno follows, and Christoph is the last, getting a low kick from Celia. For tonight, we will put aside our ranks and everyone will eat the dishes they like, drink the alcohol they like and intermingle with others.

The only nobles that are participating today are Erich and Bruno. In addition, my past subordinates Agor, Christoph and Mack are here. Also the familiar master Andrei, and his wife Natalie. The rest of the participants are the household members and the servants.

According to Erich, there are an unbelievably small amount of participants because it

seems our line is a ruined family and has been branded with the mark of disgrace. For a noble's wedding, it is to indicate the dignity of both families, and for that sake, even if you must accrue debt, you must show off in a grand manner, also gathering as many upper class nobles as possible to show off your power.

Although we are two families, Nonna's family is all but dead, and Carla, Mel and I have no other relatives. I won't be happy either if I invited some old noble that I don't even know.

"Because I am participating, the new nobles don't feel comfortable... but I'll introduce you at the balls and banquets."

For a wedding ceremony with just relatives, it seems that my connection to the nobles is weak. I don't know what is bad, but Erich is participating so it should be fine.

"Well, the talk about nobles and political factions is over. Shall we eat and drink?"

I shout and Erich smiles, and unlike the time previously at the ball, Erich is genuinely starting to get excited. Unlike a ball where you need to be conscious you aren't being rude, the ones here are all friends; even if you misconduct yourself while drunk here, no one will blame you. The quality of the alcohol here also doesn't lose in comparison with the ones at the ball, so I'll drink as much as I like.



The banquet continues, Erich finally turns red and gets drunk from the alcohol.

"You're such an unconventional man. I thought your wedding was extraordinary too, but although the ceremony was decent you have three brides. I don't know what to say."

Erich looks around.

"Your mansion is filled with women. I'm sure there aren't any women you didn't lay hands on right?"

He is unusually trying to pick a fight while drink. I wondered what was up but Rita winks and heads over to where Erich is.

“Count-sama, I heard rumors about your story, would you mind if I listen to you directly?”

She sits next to Erich on the sofa and stares at his eyes. Rita’s clothes are those of a servant, normally it would be unforgivable for a servant to sit beside him. But her chest is loose, and for the sake of tempting me, the length of her skirt is modified to be short and I can see her thighs. There are no men who would get angry at a woman like that who sits next to him, even more so if he’s drinking.

“Is... is that right? Then I shall start from the establishment of Wings of Dawn...”

Erich starts talking to Rita, and she gives me another wink. I appreciate your feelings but jealousy is also welling up within me, I’ll definitely reward you in the future and torture you until you piss yourself.

Bruno is also unusually drinking to the point where his face turns red, he’s becoming talkative and his voice is rough.

“I didn’t think that women would get married to your sloppy ass so soon, though? You didn’t get them pregnant yet, right?”

Rather than getting pregnant, Mel has already given birth.

“Well, alot has happened. By the way, it was on the day of the ball that I proposed to Nonna.”

“So while I was having a hard time, you were proposing?!”

“It was quite a useful ball.”

“Even though I was getting caught endlessly by cosmetic-smelling women and talking to them meaninglessly...”

“Were they beautiful?”

“If you think that mermen are pretty, then yeah.”

Bruno and I burst into laughter as we drank alcohol together. He already has a lover who has given birth to a child, but it seems that she couldn’t appear in public because

of her commoner's birth status, so he's troubled with the issue of getting married as a single noble. This is normal for nobles.

I'm getting hungry again, so I grab some meat and take a large bite out of it. The spices are quite effective so the meat is exquisitely soft. According to a merchant, just one of these is worth half a month's salary for a commoner.

Just my restricting the number of people here, all the food here are of the highest class, and it wouldn't be strange to find these same foods on the king's dining table. 500 gold pieces disappeared into the cost of the dresses, the food, the alcohol and a certain something.

Rather than not having enough, it is better to have leftover, so we ordered food which all of us obviously could not finish, and when tomorrow comes, the food will be given to the kids in Dorothea's orphanage to eat. If they don't eat enough meat then they won't be able to grow. A girl's growth is especially important.



"That's so nice, so nice... I also wanted to wear a dress..."

Seeing Nonna in a dress, Maria is crying and troubling those around her. As I thought, deep inside her heart, she isn't convinced with me getting married...

"Delicious, delicious... this apple pie... I wonder how they make it."

She's crying while eating the pie. She's simply a maudlin drinker.

"Mom! What is it like fucking with Aegir-san!!? When you stroke his big penis, does it squirt out liquid like 'pew'?"

"Hey, Kuu!? There are nobles here. Even though it doesn't matter if you're rude, don't be so vulgar!!"

"P****!! D****!!**** and **** are ****ing!!"

After drinking alcohol for the first time in her life, Kuu is spouting out some dirty talk that isn't bearable to listen to... rather than a story, she's just continuously spewing out dirty terms. The one who let her drink... is it Carla? It seems she used a large stein

to gulp down a large portion of wine. So this is what Kuu becomes after drinking, normally, she pretends that she isn't interested but she's actually thinking about it so vividly in her head.

In the end, Kuu became unconscious and exited; Ruu gave the alcohol a little lick before shivering happily.



"Aegir-sama, if you don't come over here, I'll get lonely."

"We will also feed you all the food."

"...Have some of Nonna's alcohol."

Mel and Carla comes to both my sides. And Nonna is surprisingly drawing her breasts close to me and letting me drink from the valley of her breasts. The three of their faces are red, so they're probably quite drunk.

Nonna's sudden change in front of the other guests caused them to be taken aback.

"There~ I told you that he said that he likes pussy more than breasts!"

"How can you act like such a pervert! It has to be breasts! A woman with large breasts will win!"

"If it's Nonna-san, then you can even fit the entire wine bottle in those overly large breasts."

As a result of some incoherent conversations, the three of them somehow started to play around with Nonna's breasts to see what can be squeezed in between them, so I just leave them alone. There's nothing better than having the wives get along together.



"Please! I'm begging you!!"

"That would trouble me! I don't know anything about you!"

Over on this side, Christoph is kneeling in front of Miti. I thought that he did something to her, but it seems that this idiot is proposing to Miti. It seems he has been trying to get her to listen while on his knees, pleading for her to become his bride.

“Will it work itself out? We can’t kick him out during this celebration...”

Melissa tells me with a troubled look on her face. Miti would have asked for help, but Maria, who she is usually close with, is gulping down wine and crying.

“Alright, Christoph. I’ll give you a chance. If you can beat Irijina in a drinking contest, then I’ll present Miti to you.”

“No way! Master, you’re so mean!”

Miti is protesting but Melissa smiles and soothes her.

“Are you serious!? I can get something like this just by having a drinking contest with the woman!? If I win, I’m going to borrow your bed!”

“A drinking contest? You’re on!”

Irijina drops the two pieces of meat in her hand and stands up. Farewell Christoph, you have invited all of this due to your foolishness.

“Hey, why are you pouring the alcohol in the tub and not the stein?”

“What are you talking about? If we use that stein, then it’ll take until morning to settle this.”

Irijina is a bottomless heavy drinker + an alcoholic. She’ll probably keep you company until you lose consciousness.



“Celia? Are you alright too?”

“Ob courth.”

“That’s good. Hurry up and go to sleep.”

“Haahu, I want alcohol.”

Celia is quick to drink, even though she’s weak to liquor. I pick her up and she starts to doze off immediately. It can’t be helped, so I’ll carry her to her room.

She’s too vulnerable and there are other guys around. Well, let’s prank her a little. I lay her down on the bed, strip all of her clothes, and place two cups near her bed. So as to not get my handwriting recognized, I used my left hand to write ‘Last night was the best. I want to see you, my beloved, again.’ and leave it as a memo. It’s perfect.



When I was on the way back from Celia’s room, I ran into Alma in the corridor. It seems like she was taking care of Sue. As expected, her mother, Mel, has also entrusted Sue to her today.

Alma bows her head. Oh yeah, she was looking at the cooking quite enviously.

A servant can only put the food in their mouth when it has cooled down, the banquet is over and it has been lowered to them. Normally we also eat together at times, but there are guests today, so they couldn’t do that. I picked up a dish with lots of freshly cooked meat piled on it from the banquet and handed it to Alma.

“This one is already cold, so I’ll exchange it with this new one.”

Alma seems to get what I’m saying, she lowered her head and picks up the plate, running off happily.

“You’re quite kind.”

Turning around, I was surprised that Sebastian was standing there. He doesn’t have any knowledge of martial arts, but he essentially doesn’t have much of a presence. It seems that the ideal butler is to be there whenever the master needs him, but never letting him realize it.

“Is that so?”

I have never thought or said anything about things like kindness myself.

“I understand the reason why the master attracts women to himself.”

“I’m kind to women because I have ulterior motives.”

“But that alone will not turn it into something like this.”

In front of his eyes, Nonna and Carla are playing around, and Mel is smiling.

“The wife and the concubines are not putting up a front and are genuinely opening up their hearts. That would be the result of the master’s character.”

Being praised like that makes me feel strange. I pour alcohol into a stein and push it towards Sebastian.

“This has also become old. Lower it and leave it aside.”

“Certainly. Then I shall partake.”



Because of Sebastian, I didn’t feel like saying anything so I rub Irijina’s ass. But she is so absorbed with her alcohol that she doesn’t notice, what a woman. By the way, Christoph was bent over and throwing up so Agor carried him out to the garden.

“He is always such an idiot.”

“It’s fine if he’s enjoying life, isn’t it?”

I drink some alcohol with Agor.

“Three brides huh... and they’re a collection of beauties, the beauty of your wife is especially dazzling.”

I didn’t think Agor would give me such compliments. But he can’t be talking about other people.

“Aren’t you also having fun with two women?”

Agor spit out his alcohol.

“...So you are aware of it.”

“You brought the maid along with you, right?”

“Actually there was a slight problem since then.”

Agor flips up his clothes to show me his side. There was a brand new scar from a small knife.

“You got stabbed?”

“Yes, quite deeply by the widow.”

I accidentally laughed. That reminds me, I have also been injured by a woman holding a knife.

“What are you doing now?”

“Both of them are staying at home but they aren’t getting along with each other. It becomes a hassle whenever we talk about things like marriage.”

“That would be the case, for common sense.”

When Nonna and I got married, we had a little dispute too.

“Can I ask how Hardlett-sama managed to convince the women?”

It’s not something that I can explain. I just went with the flow or... hmm, it’s difficult.

“As long as you drag them to bed, you can do something about it. Why don’t you do them together?”

Agor is actually housing both of them, so he’s probably doing that already.

“That is embarrassing, but I’m also not a man capable of satisfying both of them, especially the maid. Whenever I take off my clothes, her face always looks somewhat

disappointed. Maybe she's comparing me with a man from her past..."

Perhaps due to the alcohol, Agor is talking about a wide range of topics that he doesn't usually talk about. Sorry, the man from the maid's past is probably me. She should be that girl who loves rough sex and whom I made faint easily. While stroking my cock and screaming 'it's big, it's big', it seems that Agor's dick doesn't get full points.

Use all your strength to pound her repeatedly! It's love even if it's rough! I tell that to Agor before leaving. There are often times where it's better for the truth to not be known.



Aside from the first toast in the beginning, Leopolt is drinking alcohol quietly while accompanied by Nina. They themselves said that they were fine with that, and the girl is pouring alcohol quite happily. Then Nina pretends to be drunk and leans against Leopolt, but he doesn't shake her off. I can't bring myself to disturb them during their important time.



Well, the problem is this. The married couple, Andrei and Natalie. It seems Natalie entrusted her child with a babysitter in order to come here. That is how much they value their relationship with me.

But the two of them are sitting side-by-side and aren't talking to each other, leaving about a person's space in between them. Actually, I also called the girl that Andrei got pregnant to come today, but it seems that she might be close to giving birth soon and is refraining from going out, so she refused.

"I'm sorry about this, even though you went to all the trouble of inviting us, but as expected, I think that 'small body' is giving us trouble with her birth, so please let us rest."

Natalie purposely explains it to me in such a way that Andrei could hear.

"I can't believe there is such a man who would lust after such a small body, and then shoot his seeds in her too! Right, dear?"

This girl right now is just like a ruthless witch.

“Everything has already been done. Let’s not live by looking at the past, but to the future. Isn’t that what life is?”

It’s not even ‘hard-boiled’ anymore. You will only be known as a lover of little girls, and will never be able to recover.

Although with that said, he has helped me in the past that I still need to repay. Let’s help him out a little.

“Only his hobbies are special, he himself isn’t a bad man. Don’t be so cruel to him.”

“...If a man who raped an 11 year old girl and got her pregnant isn’t a bad man, then what is he?”

You can say that, but things are complicated, since I can’t see you as anything but a child either. I still think so, even after realizing that you got pregnant from a man in his late thirties.

“Instead of digging up things from the past, focus on the future. If you and your child are both happy then there won’t be any complaints.”

“Well that’s true...”

“You will be treating your child and wife precious, right Master?”

I somehow managed to settle it nicely.

“Sorry, I can’t do that.”

Why are you purposely destroying the peace?! It would have been fine to just lie here and tell her that you would cherish her.

“Actually, I have formed a relationship with Aurelia in Dorothea’s monastery, so I’ll cherish these three people.”

With a clunk, Natalie’s stein fell to the floor. I remember the times, when she was still just a child-like girl and was clinging to Andrei, who was much older than her.

“She adores me as a father. But I love her as a woman. When I told her my feelings, she opened up her body to me while still bewildered...”

Everything is too late. He has betrayed the contract; he has broken the peace, chaos is starting to spread, and a dark age is closing down upon us.

I slowly got out of my seat, Natalie told me that she wasn't feeling well and took Andrei with her back home.

“While you are still free, may I borrow a walnut cracker?”

Natalie asked Miti, but I pushed her back and sent the two of them off to the front door. If you break a man's walnut, he would sooner be killed.



I see the two of them off and was about to return, but I see a rather familiar red handkerchief on the side of the front door.

“So you came? Then why did you decline my invitation?”

The one who showed her face was Catherine. Even though I invited her, she ignored me.

“I just... felt like it.”

She wouldn't come here and leave her kids just because she 'felt like it'.

“Are you going to congratulate me?”

“Well, congratulations. It's just like a breast-lover like you to make Nonna-san your wife. I pray you don't get killed in battle and have your wife and children taken from you.”

I ignore Catherine's cynicism. Her heart probably doesn't feel calm unless she resents me. Besides, her body has already become unable to live without me. In due time, her heart will also fall.

“Well come in, we still have food and alcohol.”

“I don’t need it. Tell Nonna-san that I said congratulations.”

“Yeah, I’ll tell the three of them.”

“Three people... being lusted after by such a sex beast, I feel sorry for them.”

Catherine stood on her tiptoes and stuck out her lips. After about a 30 second kiss, she separated and left.

“If you say it, I’ll take care of you though.”

I didn’t notice that Catherine was crying, and that her stomach was bulging a little. I didn’t realize until she came and told me about it. I’ll just pretend that I didn’t notice that she was trying to hide it from me.



Now that the banquet is almost over, everyone has already started to reach for fruits and yogurts, etc. The only ones who are still eating meat and drinking alcohol are just Irijina and Mack.

Erich is also saying ‘it’s about time’ and is sending the guests back home. After this, it seems Agor, Christoph and Mack will be sent to the town’s brothel at Bruno’s expense. As expected, it is impossible for Erich to do so since he’s so widely known; there are also many women who are charmed by his heroic stories. If he calls out to a woman, they would instantly follow him.

“Mack, you look big so control yourself, but don’t break them ‘kay?”

“...”

Mack silently stuck his thumb up.

The servants mobilized to clean up the ruined living room. All the household members went to sleep.

The ones left are Nonna, Carla, Mel and myself. They adjusted their dresses and came

next to me.

“Shall we go?”

“Yes.”

“Yeah.”

“Gladly.”

Our destination is naturally my bedroom. This is the night to consummate our marriage, so this is the beginning of a fun night.

Protagonist: Aegir Hardlett 20 years old Winter

(Traditional age reckoning)

Status: Goldonia Kingdom Viscount. Eastern Independent Army Commander.

Feudal Lord of Arkland Southeast Area

Assets: 90 gold (silver and below not counted)

Weapons: Dual Crater (large sword), Custom-made large spear

Equipment: Black Cloak (Cursed)

Family: Nonna (wife), Carla (concubine), Mel (concubine), Sue (daughter),

Melissa, Maria, Rita, Kuu, Ruu, Catherine (commuting)

Servants: Sebastian (butler), Miti, Alma, Kroll, Nina

Subordinates: Celia (adjutant), Irijina (private army commander),

Leopolt (army commander), Schwartz (horse), Adolph (domestic affairs official)

Sexual Partners: 40, children who have been born: 6

CHAPTER 61

THE THREE DISHEVELED BLOOMING FLOWERS

“Please start from me first.”

On our first night as newlyweds, unlike our usual nights, they decided to take turns being my partner one at a time. After getting married, it's natural for them to want to be loved individually on the first night. The legal wife Nonna will be the first one to be loved.

“We will be waiting in the room next door. When it's over, no... when Nonna-san loses her consciousness please call us.”

Before the wedding, I did not embrace any of the other girls, so everyone was aware that I was in a state of abstinence for about a week's time. They themselves knew that the deed will be intense enough to knock them out.

The two of them left the room, and only Nonna and I were left.

“Then, please go ahead.”

Nonna stands next to the bed. The man has a duty to take off the bride's dress. As if touching something fragile, I carefully strip the dress that was comfortable to the touch.

Nonna becomes the way she was when she was just born, but she didn't hide anything and was standing in a dignified manner. Since we have just gotten married and became a couple, there is nothing to be embarrassed about anymore, and she also needs to show me everything. Moreover, her body is not one where you need to hide anything. Her skin is like the untouched snow, with not a single scratch on it, and her enormous breasts stand out from her slender body; there aren't any men who wouldn't be excited from this.

I also take my clothes off and become naked. My cock is pointing to the ceiling like there's no tomorrow.

“You don’t need to hold back. I have been told that the god of love will watch over the sworn couple on the first night.”

So the god of love will be peeping on us, not Miti.

“Our violent intercourse will become the proof of our depth of love, and god will become pleased.”

What a perverted god, but I do agree with that.

“Well let’s get right into it... before that though, there’s this.”

I took out a bottle from the side of the bed.

“What is that?”

“You’ll know when you see it.”

I spread the contents on the room floor. At first they just seem like pebbles, but after they came out of the bottle they immediately began to shine in lights of various colours.

“This is... luminous stones?”

She knows about them. This stone is taken from places such as mines, and is a gem you can rarely find underground. I was told that they weren’t formed from the crystallisation of magical power, but it still has that name. Once exposed to the air, it will reflect a faint light for a while and eventually become just a plain old rock. They don’t really have many applicable uses but, since they are quite scarce, they are expensive... It has a value of about 50 gold pieces for one bottle’s portion.

“...How beautiful, it’s like I’m in a different world.”

Since this stone isn’t very practical, it is mainly used in things like rituals, and to spice up the activities between man and woman. The luminous stones I scattered on the floor were red, yellow and blue, and even though there were some of the same colour, there were bright ones and paler ones, and it was like we were in the sky filled with stars.

“Well shall we get started?”

The light from the stones aren't strong, but with such a large amount, even if we don't have the oil lamp we could somehow make out each other's faces. I pick Nonna up and throw her onto the bed. I quietly continued to rub my erect cock on Nonna's thighs, as she was still mesmerized by such an enchanting scene.

“...Such a, for this to be such a wonderful first night... aah, it's unbelievable.”

When I got on top of her, she doesn't show me any instance of resistance or embarrassment. I kiss her while checking her hole and Nonna already doesn't need any more preparation. It was so wet that even if you were to say that it was after just finishing the act, she could still continue. She lay flat on her back and left everything to me, spreading her legs and massaging her own breasts.

“If it's now, it feels like I can accept you from anywhere. Do it hard with all your might.”

“Okay. If you can't take it, then say it.”

I slide my meat rod over Nonna's white skin until it reaches her pink vagina. That place should have been ravaged quite thoroughly by now, but even so, it's still quite nice. It's already wet and slightly opening up, but compared with my cock, it seems pretty small and doesn't seem like it'll fit. However this hole, as well as all the nooks and crannies of this woman belongs to me.

I thrust my hips with great momentum without hesitation.

“Aaaah!!!”

My cock goes much deeper than normal, and is pretty much buried all the way in up to the root. Her breasts jiggle from the force of my thrust. She lets out a voice of pain briefly but she soon calms down, raining kisses on me. She stretches her hand to my cock to confirm that it has pierced her own hole, and smiles at the fact that there are no gaps.

“Finally, I have taken everything in up to the root. I am proud as your legal wife.”

Nonna was quite pumped up like never before, but even so my cock is still too big for her delicate body. Cold sweat is leaking from her, and when I pet her stomach, it has

expanded so that my shape can distinctly be recognized.

“I’m fine. Please go ahead and torture me as you like.”

I can’t go on like this. I turn Nonna to face the other way.

“Eh! That is.”

Nonna probably wanted to make love with me while facing me, so she resisted slightly. But I turned Nonna the other way and grabbed her thigh, picking her up.

“Kyaa! This is!?”

In this position, Nonna should be able to see all the lights scattered around the bedroom. This is because she is quite often especially affected by the mood. If I make love to her in this romantic scene, she’ll be able to feel pleasure even when my different-sized thing enters her.

“How gorgeous... This beauty... I have no words! The starry sky is in this room!”

I lift Nonna up and turn her back around to face me and made love to her. When I picked her up, her breasts shake quite fiercely, making ‘bafubafu’ sounds. How many men in the world could witness such a sight?

That gets me even harder, resulting in the two of us receiving stimulation together.

“Aegir-sama! I love you!”

When she is hugged from the front, my entire body from the chest to my stomach is being crushed by her breasts and I can’t get enough of it.

“Nonna you are my wife! My woman! These are my breasts!”

“Yes! Yes! All of Nonna belongs to Aegir-sama!”

I got a little bit violent in loving her, but Nonna accepts it. The intense deed continued on for awhile.



“Aaaah-!!”

Nonna is climaxing, and I also ejaculate. Two-person’s worth of juices spew out from the place where we are connected, but I continue to move without paying too much attention to that. The time of love between just the two of us continued until Nonna faints.

I pierced deep into the back and I have already ejaculated twice. I pull out for now and the seed inside of her flows out, then I drink some water. I was going to take a little break but Nonna rests her breasts on top of my face.

“Ufufu, how are they?”

“Yeah, these are the best breasts.”

I knead the breasts on top of me, and lick her nipples. Nonna’s nipples are quite small compared to her explosively violent breasts. It seems she herself is a little concerned that her nipples have some colour to them. But if I worried about something like that, Mel would go insane.

“No matter how much I look at them they’re incredible breasts... I’ve never seen such a woman.”

“Ara, well I have never seen such a large cock like Aegir-sama’s either you know?”

We look at each other and smile.

“You wanna have a match?”

“Gladly. ♪”

I stand in the center of the bed, while Nonna kneels at my feet and looks up at my cock.

“Then here I come.”

Nonna drools over her own breasts and squeezes my cock in between them. My thing that is called monstrous by the other girls is snugly covered.

“...The head stuck out.”

However, everything could not be wrapped as the very tip is sticking out in front of Nonna’s eyes. It probably has an incredible smell since it was craving sex up until now. Unable to bear it, Nonna extends her tongue but she stops midway.

“I’ll make you feel good using just my breasts!”

“Haha, I’ll leave it to you.”

Nonna moves her own breasts skillfully and rubs me. She isn’t simply squeezing me and rubbing, but she is hitting my rod with her nipples, she’s deeply sandwiching and massaging me, and doing various caressing. The pleasure itself wasn’t that strong but the sight of my cock being sandwiched and it freely moving around like that instantly amplified my pleasure.

“Ah, you’re about to release your seed?”

“You can tell?”

“Ufufu, I didn’t receive your seed hundreds of times for nothing.”

In fact, I am already at the point where I can cum at any time. I want to cum while being wrapped in her breasts, but it would be boring to let it out on her body.

“How should I receive it?”

“Can you drink it while it’s sandwiched?”

Nonna grins.

“Of course. Please let out plenty of it.”

Nonna’s movements changed and her breasts start making slapping noises. She’s using her whole body to attack the protruding cock that is on the verge of ejaculating. My meat rod is being gently stimulated by Nonna’s large and soft breasts.

“I’m cumming!”

“Nmmoh!”

My rock hard cock trembles once strongly, and Nonna, sensing my ejaculation, envelops it with her mouth. I press against her head instinctively.

“O-!”

My balls feel a dull pain as I release a large amount of ejaculation, and the semen flows into Nonna’s mouth. At first she desperately gulped it down and I thought she couldn’t drink it all, so I stuffed it deeper in her throat to pour in my seed directly in her body.

“Oooo...”

“Nbo... ngh... nn...”

After the long, long ejaculation ended, I slowly pull out the cock that went in all the way to her stomach. As expected, the satisfied cock has gotten smaller. Nonna fell over symmetrically on the bed and was breathing quite roughly.

“Haah! Haah! Please take a look. I drank it all, not leaving a single drop.”

Nonna opens her mouth and shows me. She has a large amount of semen accumulated in her belly so it is emitting smell from her clean mouth.

“You did well. I’m happy.”

“It is also the wife’s duty to drink up her husband’s semen.”

A wife is quite the lewd creature.

“Then it’s about time... as expected I won’t be monopolizing you for the entire night.”

Nonna wipes her mouth and lays on the bed. It seems that the time has come to switch. She has exhausted her stamina, and my fire of lust has been lit so if I attacked Nonna seriously now, she would easily faint. The attacks up until now were relaxing and having her enjoy the mood.

“Show me a little of your lewd appearance.”

My cock has withered from the previous large amount of ejaculation. If I see Nonna's naked body then it'll get hard up to a certain amount, but I might as well do it while I'm completely hard.

"For something like that... how is this?"

While Nonna is still lying down, she grabbed her own breasts, bringing them to her mouth and holding them in her mouth. If Maria or Celia saw this they would probably die in agony from jealousy of not being able to do such masturbating acts.

I can hear the sounds of blood flowing back into my crotch. In an instant my cock is pointing towards the ceiling and Nonna lets out a voice of happiness.

"Alright, I'll send you flying in pleasure."

I get on top of Nonna, who's laying on her back, and stick my cock in her in her favourite missionary position.

"Aahn!"

Nonna screams but her insides are much softer than usual, so it goes in easily. I crush her breasts with my chest and glue myself to her. She loves being embraced like this.

I hold the hand that was going to rub my back on top of her head, pausing to kiss her intensely. Her legs are wrapped desperately around my waist, glueing herself close to me.

"Nonna..."

"Aegir-sama..."

We call each other's names while swinging our hips. The vivid sound of flesh slapping resonates among the starry sky rolled out on the floor, and she squirts, drooling while moaning. She reaches small climaxes endlessly, and Nonna can feel herself reaching her limit.

"I'll... fly on... the next one... Show me... your face..."

For the last one, she chose my face instead of the beautiful background. We stare at

each other at point-blank range, and I pull my cock from her repeatedly convulsing hole. Nonna complains unsatisfied, but she knows what is coming next.

“Fuun!”

I slam the withdrawn cock back in her to the deepest back, reaching all the way to the entrance of her womb.

“Aaaaaaah—-!!”

Nonna is clinging to me with her entire body, and after gripping my back with her nails, she starts to lose strength gradually and sinks into the bed. She squirts intermittently at my crotch, but that also got weaker. She is starting to emit soft sleeping sounds from her mouth, and I wipe the outflowing semen with a towel after pulling my cock out.

“Fuu... it was more amazing than usual.”

When I look, Nonna’s hole is still opened. I got a little uneasy as to whether it has gotten completely loose.



“It’s alright. If it’s like this, it will turn back to normal soon.”

When I turned to look back in a hurry, Rita was standing there holding the sheets.

“Amazing, this is so romantic. If a woman was embraced in something like this by you, then you’d win hands down.”

“Rita, I’m sorry but for today, prepare only for the four of us.”

As expected, I don’t want to lay my hands on the other girls on the first night of our marriage.

“I’m aware. However, it would not feel good if they were to get on the sheets that were wet by another girl’s feelings, right?”

The sheets contain quite a lot of moisture from the traces that Nonna left. Rita swiftly

changed them and left some drinks before leaving the room.

“Sorry for this, you’re a great help.”

As expected, if we left it as it was Carla would also feel unpleasant.

“It’s nothing, since I believe that my devotion will be returned to me someday by your cock...”

Rita hastily leaves the room. I pick up Nonna and carry her over to the bed prepared for her in the next room, calling Carla as well.



“Uwa... it’s pretty.”

Carla also seems to be fascinated by the starry sky in the room. I go around her and take off her dress while inviting her to the bed.

“It smells like Nonna...”

That can’t be helped. It’s because I made love to her that much.

“You don’t like it?”

“No, that’s not. Actually, that woman, I don’t dislike her that much.”

She can’t hear us, right!? I check the thickness of the wall by tapping the wall connecting the adjoining room. As I thought, the two of them don’t actually have a bad relationship with each other.

“But now it’s mine. I’ll disperse Nonna’s scent.”

The place where it has the most of Nonna’s smell. She puts my cock into the deepest part of her mouth. She’s sucking seriously as if she wants to milk me right off the bat, and a bit of her boorish personality shows and sometimes her teeth scrape against me, but to my hard cock, it’s quite good stimulation. Sitting on the floor at my feet in an imposing stance and caressing me doesn’t quite fit the atmosphere, but Carla looks satisfied.

I started to get aroused from the intense movements and as I was about to press against her head, her mouth separated from me.

“It would bland if the first is with my mouth.”

Lastly, she took the saliva accumulated in her mouth and smeared my entire cock messily, rubbing it a few times.

“Can I get on top?”

“Of course. But you’re doing everything.”

“It’s fine. It’s not like a man has to be attacking on the first night.”

Carla drops her waist and takes me in. But she didn’t sit down all the way and her hips are slightly floating. It would also be painful for her to take me in all the way to the root.

“Kuha... this huge dick, as usual it’s quite fiendish. It’s much bigger than a bad donkey’s right?”

“You are also shaking quite well.”

Without thinking, I grabbed onto the two shaking mounds with my hands. Carla has a lean body and glamorous flesh. When I squeeze her, her hole tightens in conjunction.

“That’s right, I’m also actually quite big right? That woman just has monstrous tits.”

Carla can also be classified as having large breasts. It’s just that Nonna’s enormous breasts are too big and are overshadowing everyone else’s. The one who truly has the most sorry chest is Maria...

“Don’t think about the other girls.”

Carla bites me on the nape of my neck. You were the one who brought it up though.

“You could tell?”

“Yeah, it expanded after all.”

“Sorry about that.... Also could you start moving soon?”

“Sure, watch this.”

Carla clasps both her hands behind her head and sticks out her hips. Her movements are not simply back and forth, and up and down but it was like she was dancing – she was gyrating and twisting around, then she bent forward as if urging me to suck her breasts, showing off a diverse range of moves.

“How’s that? Is it good?”

She placed one hand on my chest and one hand on her own hips and danced. Her breasts are jiggling around, bringing me more excitement.

“Amazing moves. Did you practice?”

“Yep, every night with a pillow between my crotch going ‘Aegir, Aegir~’... it expanded!”

I can’t help but get fired up when I hear about such a free girl practicing sex techniques for my sake every night. Not being able to be patient any more, I grab her waist and thrust upwards savagely.

“Nnh! Amazing!!... After, Melissa also taught me a little.”

I’m starting to imagine the scene where Carla and Melissa are intertwined with each other while practicing.

“...it expanded even more! You cheater!!”

Carla places both hands on my chest and moves her hips roughly. It wasn’t like the previous movements where she was trying to have fun, they were movements for the sake of receiving my semen.

“Aegir-! I love you! I will always love you-!!”

“Carla, you will always be my woman! Uu-!”

Seeing how I stopped moving, Carla drops her hips and fixed them in place. Then when she felt the seed shooting up, she stiffens and collapses on top of my chest.

“Byuu, byuu, byuu,... it pulsed 12 times.”

“Don’t count it, it’s embarrassing.”

“Nfu, I’ll ask Nonna and the others how many times they got tomorrow.”

I’m concerned about the relationship between my wives. We will be together from now on until we die afterall. That is not only the relationship between myself and the girls, but it is also the bond between the girls themselves.

“Aha! The amount is amazing!”

When Carla pulls out my cock, she leaves a puddle of my seed on my stomach.

“Such a waste.”

Carla scoops it up and plasters it against her genitals, that spectacular scene causes my cock to once again stand erect.

When she saw that, she stood up and moved all the way to the window.

“If I take too long then the night will be over, I’d feel sorry for Mel.”

“It’s not like you to be concerned about others. Even if it gets bright, I’ll continue until everyone is satisfied, you know?”

“I never had such a sticky nature in the beginning.”

Carla puts her hand on the wall and turns back to look at me. The semen that she painted earlier caused the surroundings of her genitals to be dripping.

“Do it roughly with all your might. Do it so that I’ll scream loud enough for the whole house to hear.”

“Such a pervert.”

I stand up and move around behind Carla.

“Our girls are all perverts. It’s because we’re all happy from Aegir’s monstrous cock, right? Our home is a den of lewdness.”

I’m sure that Nonna and Celia will vehemently protest that. But I like how Carla doesn’t hold back on those sorts of things.

“Then I’ll have to punish those naughty girls.”

“Yeah, torture me with attacks from your large dick.”

I grab her butt and penetrate her. When I do so, Carla matches my thrusts and sticks her ass out with all her might, plunging it all the way to the entrance of her womb.

“Nkyaaa!!”

Just as Carla declared, she screamed so that the entire house could hear.

From there, it was like a storm of sex, we move around from the wall to the desk, sofa, bed, while still connected from behind. Of course we were constantly shaking our hips so if there were any spectators, they would surely think that it was a comical appearance. But in actual fact it was a splendid copulation, I push her down on the sofa and ejaculate, I roll her on the bed and ejaculate, I put her feet on the floor and ejaculate and attack wholeheartedly, and Carla moans continuously.

“He-hey! Could you put it in even deeper? Until it reaches the inside of my womb. Melissa did it right?”

Carla gets overexcited and suggests something dangerous, but she probably wants to make children, so I don’t want to let her injure her womb.

“If you want children then you should stop. In return I’ll do anything else that’s fun.”

It seems Carla is already close to her last climax so I’ll let her choose her finishing position.

“It’s fine to continue from the back like this... just, the place...”

I was urged by Carla to move all the way to the window and when we did so, she surprisingly opened the window. Furthermore, she leaned far out of the window, feeling the wind.

“This is fine! Attack me fiercely!”

“...They'll hear you though?”

The problem isn't that she might get heard. It's already at the point where she is asking to be heard.

“You aren't just embracing a woman. Do you dislike letting the neighbours know?”

I can see the appearance of Nonna resting her head in her hands, but I guess it'll be just for today. Probably the entire capital already knows that I'm a women lover from the rumours, who cares.

“There-!”

“Ahn!... Aaaaaaah!!!! Nnaaaaaaah!! Kyaaaaaa!!”

Matching my insertion, Carla took deep breaths and let out loud moans out from the window. It wasn't clear that her voice was out of pleasure, but it was just one of her preferences. The time was late at night and although the mansion was large, as expected, her voice resonated throughout the neighbourhood. In the pitch black, several of the neighbouring houses are lighting their oil lamps.

“The thick dick came!! Thrust it in me moreeee! Nhoooo!! This dick's the besttttt!!”

Carla faces towards the outside and purposely screams vulgarly that you could not bear to listen to. Without a doubt the neighbouring houses could hear everything, and my reputation as being obsessed with women will probably be exaggerated.

Stupid Carla!!

Nonna probably woke up. She heard the voice from the adjoining room, but since it was our precious time together, it's not like she could come in.

“It's fine to let people hear you, but wouldn't it be better if the two of us had more

fun?”

To me, rather than showing people, I want the two of us to make love to each other intensely.

“Alright.... But, to be honest, screaming vulgar things like this, letting people hear me, I think...”

Carla’s crotch is flooding.

“Geez just do what you want...”

I don’t pay attention to it and continue to thrust repeatedly from the back of Carla, Carla screams obscenely. The people in the entire house have already been woken up and the window of the house next door has also been opened. Even so, we made love to each other unabashed, and we finally reach the last moment.

“I’m cumming!”

“I’m also... at my limit.”

She doesn’t have the luxury to scream obscenely anymore as I hug her from behind and suck on the nape of her neck. I leave my mark on her as to say that she is my woman while releasing my seed.

“All of it, do all of it! Please!”

While telling me that, Carla turned back. Then she put my fingers in her mouth as she shakes her ass even more.

“Is that how it is?!”

It seems she meant all her holes, so she forcefully screwed my fingers in her mouth, and when the other hand’s fingers dug into her asshole, Carla looked satisfied as she leaned against the window and collapsed.

Well, just when I was thinking that Mel is next, it seems Carla’s consciousness hasn’t flown away yet.

“Lift me... up... for the... last.”

“Hm?”

I pull my cock out, and hug her, lifting Carla up while she’s still facing the other way.

“Just like that... by the window...”

What is it? I take her to the window and she used her fingers to spread her genitals, which were slightly swollen from the intense intercourse.

“Loook!! Look at everythinggg!!”

A large amount of my seed and her urine was sprayed out from Carla’s insides; the moonlight reflected off of it and shined brilliantly. Once she finished urinating outside the window, she lost consciousness with a satisfied look on her face.



“...She’s such a pervert. It could be heard by everyone in the town, let alone those in the house.”

Rita appears again and changes the sheets. But this time, the floor has also covered in juices.

“You couldn’t imagine something like this from the usual Carla-san.”

Rita says as she takes out a cloth and quickly mops it up.

“A terrible pervert... but she has such a happy face.”

Unlike Nonna who was sleeping quietly, Carla’s eyes are half-opened, her tongue was sticking out, and her legs were spread apart obscenely. It’s the exact appearance of someone who just got raped, but her cheeks were relaxed and she looked happy.

“So the next one is Mel-san right? She’s the last one so please don’t hold back and get the bed and the room dirty.”

After the cleaning of the room was done, Rita left quickly. It’s not like I intend to get

the room dirty though. I carry Carla, who was in a horrible state, to the standby room and Nonna slaps her cheeks lightly.

“...This pervert, making such a happy face... really such a pervert.”

I'll leave Nonna to look after Carla. Well, Mel is next.



“Uuu, it's hard to listen to the endless sounds of your husband embracing girls in the adjoining room.”

Mel was in a little bad mood. First, I'll kiss her and caress her as if dancing among the lights of the stones.

“Amazing, it's just like a starry sky. Preparing something like this, you are really skilled at making a woman melt.”

This stone is very popular among the women. They are expensive as expected though, but when I get the chance I'll test them out again.

“Um, could you remove my dress first? When you get me too aroused, it'll become dreadful.”

I don't know what she's talking about, but I strip her dress and continue kissing her. She is increasingly aroused and when I hug her strongly, I arrive at the reason. When I look at the wet feeling against my chest, I saw Mel squirting white milk from her breasts.

“Aaah, it's embarrassing! I can't help it though, since Sue is just starting to get weaned.”

The breast milk that she had been giving to Sue up until now causes her breasts to swell, so when you give them stimulation it starts coming out. It's not something embarrassing, it's wonderful.

“Squeeze me with your breasts.”

“Eeeh!? You want me to squeeze you?”

Mel also has reasonable sized breasts, but among the absolute reigning champion Nonna, and the voluptuous Carla and Melissa, she doesn't really stand out, so she hasn't really used them to service me.

"Aegir-san's thing is too big so with my size I won't be able to squeeze them that well, and groping my breasts now, well."

"I don't mind, so do it."

Mel gave in, squeezing my meat rod between her breasts filled with milk, moving them up and down. That action also brought Mel quite the amount of stimulation....

"Ooh-! It came out."

A fountain of white liquid blew out from her nipples and sprinkled all over my body. Mel is trying to suppress it somewhat but when she presses her breasts against my cock, the stimulation causes an ever larger eruption.

"Geez! If I do this then it's obvious that I'll spray it everywhere. That was probably your objective from the beginning wasn't it?!... Well if that's the case, then you'll have to go along with it until the end, so enjoy being covered with the breast milk."

Mel got serious and moved her body roughly, getting my body and the bed covered with her breast milk.

"Could you let me squeeze them?"

"You're really a helpless one... do as you please."

I have Mel sit on the edge of the bed and I hug her from behind, groping her breasts. Immediately breast milk sprayed out but the amount was small.

"If you squeeze it slowly more from the base then..."

"Like this?"

I did as Mel declared and milk came out with twice the amount of force. It was a waste so I put it in a cup. When I show Mel the accumulated milk, she turns red and looks away.

The foreplay is finished, and it's about time we change positions to become one. My cock is still raring to go and is plenty enough to please Mel. Mel sighed and she started to speak solemnly while staring at my cock.

"As usual... I'm just a woman who gets pleased from having a man close to 20 years younger embrace her."

"On top of that, you're squirting breast milk."

When I poke fun at her, Mel grips my important place tighter. I spoke up without thinking.

"Yes, that's right. I'm a pathetic woman who was driven mad by this monster. I finally gave birth to a child and became a wife."

The child and the wife, both of those are things you wanted right? But it would be insensitive for me to say.

"Until it's over, this monster will be taking care of me as a woman, right?"

"It's not like your hole closes up when it's over right? If you're pretty then I'll embrace you forever."

"I'll try my hardest to take care of that."

The both of us continue to rub each other's genitals while talking, but the one who made a sound first was me.

"Now come."

I sit cross legged and called her over.

"Thanks for the meal."

She is already wetter than she has ever been before.

"Uuu!! Aha-! Fu... in this position I can't move furiously, is that alright?"

“Yeah, that’s fine. This is good.”

In this position, Mel’s breasts are perfectly in front of my face.

“Ufufu, so you’re going to drink while you’re entering me?”

I got exposed, but that’s exactly correct. It seems that my instincts seek the breast milk of a female. Perhaps it is because of things like a mother’s love, and it might be because a 20 year old man wants something embarrassing.

“Have as much as you want. Sue is also weaned, so I don’t mind even if you drink it all.”

The stimulation from the insertion already causes juices to leak from her nipples. I suck them, almost as if biting them.

“Nnah! Even though I just weaned my child, I have a large baby now.”

I alternate between left and right nipple and suck all over the place. There is still enough of Mel’s breast milk for me to gulp down.

“Delicious... This might become a habit.”

“Nnmou, ah-! While you’re piercing me with your big cock, nnh-! Such simple mindedness nnh!”

I move my hips slowly while burying my face in her breasts and drinking her breast milk. Mel is petting that head of mine gently.

“If you want breast milk, then I’ll give you as much as you want. However, when Sue grows bigger, I won’t be able to secrete any more.”

“That’ll be a waste.”

“But there is a way.”

Mel strokes her stomach that was slightly inflated from being stabbed by me.

“Three of them were safely born. It’s a little worn out over the years, but it can still give birth.”

Mel is 37 years old, she can probably still give birth to 2 or 3 more. When I thought about hurrying up the mating process, my crotch pulsed. Just the thought was enough to get me aroused and it might get me to premature ejaculate.

“Ara? Already? Ah-!?”

“Guh!”

I hug Mel, who was riding on my lap, and thrust my hips upwards. After a short moment, Mel’s stomach slowly expanded. My cock is tightly inside her so it won’t spill.

“You still came this much after thoroughly embracing two people...? I’ll have to prepare for my next birth.”

I wanted to change positions but Mel held my shoulders down.

“If possible, could we not continue like this? I’ll give my milk to this young man while he gives me his seed. If you do it with a motive then you’ll feel unbelievable pleasure.”

The body that I was hugging was dyed red in arousal. Mel’s face seems to have no more luxury and even if I don’t move roughly, she’ll lose her consciousness. As if responding to her body, her clitoris got larger and is hitting my crotch. My sweaty body has an extra piece of flesh touching me slightly, but it’s soft and very comfortable to hug.

“Even though you’re over 30, you’re still beautiful.”

“What is this, all of a sudden?”

“You still have skin, beauty and hips and stomach that I want to impregnate, that doesn’t lose to young women...”

“Wha-! What are you talking about, it’s too embarrassing!”

No matter how much Mel complains, I pile lots of praises on her while in between my gulps of her milk. Of course, my hips don’t stop and continue to move.

I suck, thrust and praise, and finally Mel reaches her limit. Among the slow movements, her insides are convulsing, as she climaxes and hugs my head.

“Guuuuuuu, ah-! Aaaaaaah...”

It was a relaxing climax, but something unexpected happened here.

“Aah-!”

“Hm?”

Because her arms lost her strength, her weight is loaded onto my cock and it enters even deeper. Whether it was due to it being a special night that her sexual feelings are increased and the entrance to her womb is loosened. Also Mel is a woman who has given birth to three people so it was comparatively easier to open her womb.

With a squelch, the tip of my dick peeks into her womb. It was pain since the time she gave birth, and the pleasure of giving everything to a man.

“gh———!!”

“Uo-!”

From the feeling of violating a womb, that I could not enjoy except with Melissa, I start ejaculating. And the impact of feeling me ejaculate directly into her womb caused Mel’s head to swing back, she didn’t even let out a sound, and her face warped in pleasure in a manner that she could not show her face to her daughter, then fainted. Breast milk is squirting out from her breasts like a broken fountain.



“It seems that you have satisfied everyone.”

Rita comes for the third time, she quickly exchanges the sheets that were covered by breast milk.

“The night is already ending. I couldn’t sleep at all. You will give me thanks the next day, to my body, right? “

Rita grins and was about to leave the room.

“Sorry for making you do things like a cleaning lady.”

Rita is wearing maid-like clothes but she is my lover. Although it was pushed onto her forcefully, she’s different from the servants and it’s not like she has to do the work.

“Please don’t worry. If I am of use to Hardlett-sama.”

I am curious about that. Why is Rita doing this much and working like this?

“Rita, why are you working so much for me?”

“I have an ulterior motive.”

“Is it money or something?”

“No, it’s not.”

Rita turns around and points at my crotch.

“I, should I say it is your thing...? To say it frankly, I love your large cock. “

The words came out.

“The first time I saw Hardlett-sama’s thing, I thought it was some sort of joke. It was like the size of a horse, and the shape was also fantastic. A largely expanded meat umbrella, a rod with lots of veins crawling over it, in addition it was hard like steel... everything was perfect!”

“O, oh.”

“Actually being embraced I felt its wonderfulness and it was more than my expectations, and I thought it would be fine if I died.”

So that’s it, Rita quietly says.

“If you’ll be affectionate with me using this wonderful cock then I’d even sell my soul to the devil. Even things like licking Hardlett-sama’s feet or peeing on me would be like nothing.”

“I, I see.”

“Therefore don’t hold back and work me hard, and please occasionally pound me with your dick. I will be delighted with that much.”

I thought she was originally a woman who felt happiness from being ruled over, but unexpectedly she is deep in the darkness.



“Um...”

The door opened and Nonna and Carla excitedly came. After our first night, it’s natural to think that we would sleep together.

“Uuun”

Mel, whose consciousness flew away, also realizes quickly.

“It’ll be morning soon. Let’s sleep lots today until evening.”

The two of them jumped into bed. The sleeping Mel is on my right hand, Carla is on my left hand, and Nonna got on top of my body, then we fall asleep.

CHAPTER 62

THE RETURNED LETTER

Uuuuuunn...”

After my intense exercise last night, I felt sluggish when waking up. I pull away gently from the three girls coiling around me, trying not to wake them up.

I opened the window while stepping around the rocks that have lost their light. The sun has already risen high.

“...Uuuun”

“...Gue”

Nonna turns around in her sleep and her humongous breasts cover Carla’s face. Ooh, it’s completely covering her nose and mouth. Carla’s limbs are kicking and struggling, finally she was able to grasp her breasts and push her off.

“Puha-What is this?! Are you trying to kill a newlywed so soon!? Take it off... stinks of Nonna.”

There is something sticky on Nonna’s face, it’s probably wet from Mel’s breast milk.

“That reminds me, in the end of yesterday, it didn’t stop.”

“But it won’t come out next time you know?”

“Stop it, it’s not like you should be dripping all the time. If I suck on it, it should come out.”

“Is that so? Try tasting it a bit.”

I’m also reluctant, it’ll be fine if I take one side right?



“Uuun, my face is all sticky... What’s going on?”

Nonna wakes up with the sleeping Mel’s twisted body in front of her face, and Carla and I were sucking on one breast each. We both get plenty of morning milk and we can start our day.



Having worked until dawn, we were supposed to be sleeping up till noon but there are still many women who didn’t come to the living room. Having checked on yesterday’s condition, Maria and Kuu are completely out of the question, and they certainly won’t be able to get up for the whole day. Melissa is holding her a head a little. Irijina woke up with me at daybreak quite excited and seems to be running around in the garden full of energy.

“I guess that’s alright for today. Why don’t we make tea for our first day as newlyweds?”

I sit down on the sofa, and the three beauties were feeding me tea and snacks. This luxurious lifestyle is good too. But this peace won’t last for long.



“Uwaaaaaa!!”

A scream resounded – it’s Celia’s voice. It’s rare to see her so flustered. With noisy shuffling from her footsteps, she appears. She just woke up so she her bed hair was pretty bad.

“A-Aegir-sama! Yesterday, who was in my room?!! “

“Hm? Well that is...”

Celia instantly hides the paper she was holding in her hand. Oh yeah, I did do something mischievous like that yesterday. Let’s play along some more.

“Oh yeah, I had Christoph carry you while you were drunk, you talked for quite a while, huh?”

Celia fell to her knees heartbroken. She hangs her head, muttering curses.

“How did this happen... if I don’t erase it... if I don’t silence him.”

Celia tenses her faces as if she has prepared herself.

“Aegir-sama, where is Christoph-san?”

“Yesterday, he went to the brothel. He went back in the morning and at this moment isn’t he probably sleeping in the army dormitories?”

“The brothel... I’ll go out for a bit and come back.”

Celia has an incredible look as she prepares to go out. It’s not like this lie will cause Christoph to take a cute girl away from me, right? If a cute girl was taken from me, I would take damage equal to having Nonna stolen from me.

But it seems I don’t need to worry about that.

“...Celia? Where do you think you’re going?”

She hides a dagger in her thigh and holds her sword. She has throwing knives and other shady gear on her body that I’ve never seen before.

“I’m borrowing Schwartz. It is something that I must take care of without fail!”

“Wait, where are you going to do what?”

“I’ll explain my circumstances later! Please let me go! If I don’t silence that man, I won’t be able to stay by Aegir-sama’s side!”

I’ll just cut that guy’s head off! Celia is making a fuss, crying and screaming, and everyone is gathering to see what was going on. In the end, I admitted my guilt and my three new wives gave me the cold shoulder.



“Aaaah, I’m so glad, I’m really glad, I thought that I was defiled by that man, and his filthy liquids were poured into me, uuuuu.”

It seems like Celia's soul came out of her mouth from the way she sounds, and she sinks to the floor on the spot. Her tear glands burst as she covers her face with her hands and starts crying. It's not like he did anything that bad which she hated; Christoph may be stupid and incompetent, but he's not a villain.

"...Why did you tell me such a pointless lie?"

"That was overkill Aegir~ She's bawling."

"Choose the right people to joke with. Here, Celia-chan, go eat together with Ruu and calm down."

No, it was just that Celia was very defenseless... I tried to say that but everyone left. Even though I was previously surrounded by women and we were having fun and drinking tea, now it's just me and Sebastian.



"The price of teasing a woman is big, huh."

"If the woman cries, then an excuse won't work."

"You have experience?"

"Due to having accumulated a useless amount of years."

"This sugar pastry is delicious though."

"I made it. Here is a bag filled with it. When you want to please someone, feel free to use it."

"Sorry for the trouble."

Speaking to an uninterested Sebastian is like an oasis that heals loneliness.



Celia is eating in the living room while crying still, and my cruelty has spread to everyone aside from the sleeping Maria and Kuu on the second day. However, only Kroll who is seeing Celia look weak and crying fell in love again, and the unproductive, unrequited love continued.

“Celia, sorry about that.... I intended for it to be a little prank.”

“No, it was also me who lost my composure. I thought that this body exclusive for Aegir-sama was embraced by that vulgar man.”

Celia really hates Christoph, huh.

“It’s not an apology, but I’ll give this to you.”

It’s Sebastian’s special sugar pastries. There were plenty of them stuffed in a bag.

“Aren’t these... the goods from the shop? Tasty!”

Celia secretly likes sweets. She comprehends the menus of all the surrounding confectionaries, and is quick to find out about newly released items. I saw it when I snuck in her room last night, but she had written the approximate times it takes for each shop to finish baking. For this kind of thing, she’s quite the diligent one.

“If you like them, I’m glad. So somehow let this time’s incident slide.”

“No! I never minded it in the first place! I was just surprised and cried, that’s all!”

“But, you should be careful with alcohol from now on. You might actually get taken home by another man.”

“I’ll be careful...”

Celia makes a meek face, and once again my mischievous heart is welling up from within me.

“When I woke up, Kroll was lying naked beside me.”

Kroll is in love with Celia. But the fact that he had no chance was known by everyone except the people concerned.

I was going to end it with a joke, but Celia started emitting bloodlust.

“If... he made that mistake, then I will cut off his dick and balls and make him apologize to Aegir-sama”

I hope that Kroll doesn't lose his mind then.



Several days passed without anything happening.

There was a small incident where Nonna created a permission system for my acts of love. In other words, aside from the concubines, Nonna suggested that she must give permission before being embraced by me, but because of the absolute rejection from the girls and the rebellion of Carla, the ruling party, it got scrapped.

There were many loud voices seeking for the punishment of the legal wife, so at night, Nonna was publicly executed in front of the other lovers... as punishment, she was getting her ass slapped by me until it turned red. Moreover while she had tears on her face, the traitor Carla pointed out that she was gushing wet, the rumor that she was a masochistic pervert was spread and she largely forfeited her dignity. This is a secret between husband and wife, but from that day forward when it was just the two of us, Nonna would occasionally ask for her ass to be slapped.



However, this small incident will be blown away.

“Master. You have letters.”

I am a little surprised. The one who usually brings the letter to me is Miti or Alma. At times, Carla will run off from my side and go, but it's quite rare for Sebastian, who is busy with many things, to bring it directly to me.

“Three letters... No, two letters and one item. Since there is one item with the royal family seal on it.”

“Show it to me.”

The contents are regarding that which we talked about in person, the official inauguration of the eastern independent army's military strength, which includes 2000 people.

“It finally came. With this, the bandits in my territory will be swept clean.”

In any case, the same amount of armed soldiers will be entering my territory of 2000 residents. From the perspective of the bandits, they will think that there is no workplace more unsuitable than this.

“Even though 2000 people's worth of supplies will be provided from the kingdom, why are they placing such military force in the remote regions?”

“On the surface, it should be to exterminate the mountain bandits.”

Leopolt answers Celia's question.

The mountain bandits right now are quiet, but you don't know when they will appear. We don't know the exact amount of people either, but there should be about several hundreds of them. And unlike farmers, even the women and children can be included in their fighting strength. If you think about it this way, 2000 soldiers is not an unusual amount.

“So it's just appearance's sake?”

Recently, Celia has been listening carefully to Leopolt. She has recognized him to be more knowledgeable about military tactics and strategies than myself, and she's trying to absorb the knowledge. I tell that guy if he ever puts his hands on Celia, then I'll take Nina.

“Well. The answer lies in the central army.”

Erich's central army is divided between the first division army to the third division army, and has already climbed over 30,000 in strength after being reinforced, and even now it is still being strengthened. It is impossible to say that this is for recovering the damage suffered in the Arkland war.

“The answer is obvious if you think about the reinforcement of the central army. His Majesty is planning to challenge all the countries in the north.”

“No way! Aren’t they allies!?”

“There are no allies or enemies in diplomacy. If there is profit to be gained, then we collaborate, that’s it. Right now, there is no meaning for Goldonia to deepen its relationship with them.”

“Then where do you think he’ll challenge first?”

“It’s Treia. Yurest Union is touching our entire border but, Goldonia is exchanging culture with them deeply, both countries also have many nobles who share blood relations with each other, so they would want to absorb them without fighting if possible.”

Celia is taking notes. You better not lose those notes. It might be problematic for diplomacy.

“The eastern independent army is a meddler?”

“That’s right. The central army is moving south and on the way, we are also located in the south. On top of Treia’s forces diminishing, they are also compelled to split forces for us in the remote regions.”

However, Leopolt continues.

“At this stage, it is impossible. If they attack without reason, the other countries will intervene using invasion as the reason. Since Goldonia is a rich land and quite attractive to them. The current strategy is to surround themselves with all the countries in the north as the enemy, so that Goldonia’s prospects for victory are slim.”

“Why do they need an excuse to justify the start of war, is it because a just cause is needed?”

“That’s right. But I don’t know what that would be. I am not too familiar with politics.”

If you can say this much, it’s quite enough. In any case, isn’t it fine to do just what was

said and take out the mountain bandits?

“I’m sorry for interrupting. Should we take a look at the other letters?”

I got lost in thought. I look at the letter that Sebastian handed to me.

“This is from Adolph is it? Celia...”

I look over it briefly and hand it to Celia. His letter is long, and I was reading it desperately last time, but his conclusion was that ‘nothing really happened, everything is proceeding smoothly’. Thus, I leave it to Celia.

“This is... that man!!”

There was no problem in the contents. However, the letter that Celia replied in my place last time was returned with its misprints and her strange way of writing corrected.

I ignore the rampaging Celia and had Sebastian say the one final part. But, my faithful butler hesitated after I held my hand out.

“What’s wrong?”

“No... this will need more than a hand.”

Sebastian is holding a box, a heavy-looking one which had a letter inside.

“What is this...”

This isn’t one letter.

“Well, that is the one letter. It came via a specialized deliveryman from the Olga Federation.”

The specialized deliveryman is even faster than the specialized delivery box, pushing a horse to the limit just to get the letter delivered. Of course, the cost is not cheap. There are extremely limited people who could do this.

I don’t really need to confirm it but let’s just check the sender.

[Claudia Albens Malordol] To my beloved Aegir-sama

I thought so, I knew it.



“Ahem, then I’d like to hear everyone’s opinions.”

Nonna puts the letter in front and takes the lead. Celia has reported it.

“As expected this should be told to the legal wife Nonna-san.”

That’s how it is. The ones in here who know about Claudia are just three people: Nonna, Celia and Melissa.

“So, why did you write a letter to that person? You already knew that she was trouble, didn’t you?”

The ones aside from the three people still do not seem to understand a single thing but Nonna is beginning her inquiries.

“Previously, I talked about this in bed...”



In the Past, White City

“Haa Haa... That was good. This thing is your treasured sword that slays women.”

“You have also become quite lewd yourself. I’m fired up.”

“Aah, my beloved! Don’t make me so happy! I won’t be able to resist!”

I roll over on the bed and hold out my hand.

“Come here Claudia.”

Claudia rests on my arm pillow and doesn’t stop kissing me.

“My beloved, you’re about to leave soon, aren’t you...? If I wasn’t that man’s wife then I would go with you.”

I’m not the type to take you along to walk with me but not saying anything is kindness.

“If there is anything I can do, tell me. If you want money then I’ll gather it, if you want women I’ll find someone pretty from one of my servants. If you prefer a noble woman, then I’ll offer you my daughter. Please, go ahead and violate me.”

Yesterday, Claudia’s daughter, Christina, said the same thing to me which left not only me, but her mother afraid, and shut herself inside.

“It’s alright. I have enough money to travel, more importantly are you sure about the medicine?”

It goes without saying that it’s the contraceptive.

“Aah! It’s really annoying!! Being the wife of such a dull man, I won’t be able to accept your seed. It’s certainly that man’s fault that I can’t get pregnant either. It would be different now if it was Aegir-dono’s thick seed juices!”

Claudia has intense mood swings. When I think that she’s clinging to me like a dog wanting to be spoiled, the next thing I know, she gets fired up with intense and irrational anger towards her husband. If you gave birth to a child while being married to a prestigious noble, you would be quite trapped.

“If I am ever separated from you, my dear beloved, then I’ll be broken. Will you at least tell me where I can send you my letters?”

“Even if you ask me, I’m just a wanderer. I can’t say when I will be somewhere.”

“...Then as I thought, would it be better for you to become a knight in my mansion rather than living that uneasy lifestyle? I’ll even prioritize you above anything and everything.”

“I may also get a place in a town somewhere, and settle down. When that happens, I’ll send you a letter.”

“Really? I will be looking forward to it! Please remember it, you are my number one, my everything. Tell me anything you desire. Because I will do anything to get you to turn and look at me...”

Claudia uses her body to rub against me, and once again swallows my reinvigorated cock.

“Thick, it’s big! Thrust through my stomach! Ooooh!! Use your penis and fuck this lewd self of mine until I’m dead!!”



Present Day

“It’s certain that he has found this place to settle down. You got money from her and you got her body; I thought that it was bad already but you sent letters. If you are exchanging letters with her, there might be a possibility of you abandoning us.”

“And this is the result...”

There are easily 50 letters from Claudia. Judging from the handwriting, you can see that they are all characters from a woman, it was probably written by Claudia herself and not another person in her place.

“I apologize for being rude to a high class person, but I believe this person is not the kind of woman who gets delighted from playing around. This is coming from me, but I am also aware that I am a woman who thinks heavily of a man’s love for me. It’s just that I can see that this woman is beyond that level.”

Rita also begins to talk anxiously. I didn’t think I was playing around when I sent letters though. Even though it was pillow talk, I did also promise, and she lent me money with an ulterior motive to help with the management of territory. Erich did also say that you should treasure your connections with your fellow nobles.

“What’s important is your relationship with the head of the family. What are you doing by stealing the wife?”

I pretend not to listen to Nonna’s cold voice.

“So in the end, what did you talk to her about?”

As expected it would take too long so I'll count on Celia to summarize what was written.

“...Guh, it's the first time I'm reading something so unpleasant.”

Celia occasionally clicks her tongue when she reads the endless amount of letters. I saw that the summary wasn't getting close to progressing, it seemed to be predominantly meaningless things, like compliments to me and words of love.

For a while, Celia groaned, got irritated, sighed and finally finished the summary.

“It- it's finished.... I'll be taking a short break.”

Celia heads over to the dining room unsteadily. She's probably going to replenish herself with something sweet after being damaged mentally. Well, now let's take a look at her fruits of labor.

To my beloved Aegir-sama ~abbreviated

I am thankful that you have kept your promise. ~abbreviated

I was surprised and couldn't believe that you are a Goldonian noble. ~abbreviated

You also became in possession of territory. ~abbreviated

Territory management will probably be tough so you can tell me anything. I will help you as much as you want. ~abbreviated

I have heard that Goldonia has changed their king and also faced a war. My family has connections with the Goldonian king, so I will come and greet the new king once. Of course, that will be the surface intention, in reality I am coming to meet you. ~abbreviated

I will be bringing lots of tributes so please be patient. ~abbreviated

“...the heck is that.”

A single letter would be enough for just the contents. So the other 49 letters are just full of compliments to me? Thinking back there were some times that Celia's face turned red, so there must have been some obscene things in there as well.

"It was something I expected, but she's coming here, huh."

With that said, it is a long journey from White City to Goldonia. Not to mention, if a noble's wife were to travel, it would take several times slower than if we were to go. Moreover, the cold weather in the Federation is harsh, so she should first try to avoid travelling in the winter.

"It is winter right now, so she can't depart. She will have to wait for the Federation's late spring to come before setting out... the estimated time is two months, so the arrival will be around the height of summer."

I did a quick calculation.

"You're naive."

"That's probably impossible."

Nonna and Melissa instantly denies it.

"Please look at this letter. I have never seen something like this. This is more than saying it clearly! If you send something like this do you think that a person would really wait until spring? She has already, no, when you write this letter she may already be on the way."

Nonna says that, but it's really difficult to travel in winter. If she's coming to greet the royal family of another nation, you'll need attendants and servants and a large group so she can't come here at a quick pace. Will she really be able to bear it?

"From what I could see in White City, her attachment to Aegir-san was incredible. We just talked about it, but didn't she say that she would hand over her daughter if you wanted? I think she wouldn't care if a servant died on the way and come here at full speed."

Melissa and Nonna have the same opinion. I wonder if my thinking really is naive.



On a later day, the answer was revealed in the place of the establishment ceremony for the eastern independent army.

“Then I’ll be counting on you, Lord Hardlett.”

“Yessir, this is certainly his Majesty’s army, I will be borrowing it.”

The establishment ceremony ended and the 2000 soldiers came under my command. After preparing for about two days, we will head out to Rafen.

“Very well, I also have one more notice for you. There was a messenger of a noble from Olga Federation, Marquess Malordol’s family. It seems they are coming to greet me no matter what. They said, since the enthronement, they were late because of the continuing strife.”

I know that. But I can’t say that.

“Since the Marquess himself can’t be away from his territory for several months, it seems that his wife is coming. I don’t have to say this but to my country, there is no relationship more important than the one with the Federation. Also, Marquess Malordol’s family has a pedigree with quite the tradition in the Federation.”

I also know that. But of course I will not say it.

“In the past, their family has also been made a part of our royal family. Although they are but one noble family, we cannot treat them with disdain. Also, when the wife heard of your heroic stories in the earlier war, she became curious.”

I don’t believe that a high class noble of the Federation will be interested in the skirmishes in the central plains. I believe it is because in this short period, I have been writing her letters to let her know. She has quite the tenacity and the ability to take action.

“Thus, I want you to entertain her and be hospitable to her. She’s a wife of a prestigious noble, she must be hungry for some stimulating conversation. If you talk to her about the war then she’ll probably be satisfied.”

She definitely won't be satisfied. She is seeking stimulating sex.

"I heard rumors that you don't have slovenly women. Hearing that you married a wife, Madam Malordol should be able to live without worrying."

Probably as soon it becomes just the two of us, she'll take off all her clothes and come hug me. I'm willing to bet on it.

"I will humbly receive her."

"Good, about the time of arrival though... she is coming from a different place than White City. It seems that it will take three weeks, and she will arrive in spring."

I once again see a woman's tenacity. In addition, the messenger for the royal family came at a later date than when I received my letter.

I felt a vague fear, but I have also matured in various ways since I last embraced Claudia. Even if you tell me it's attachment or tenacity, the point is that women are coming to be embraced by me because they have fallen for me. 'Why don't I turn the tables on her', I thought as a smile escapes.

Protagonist: Aegir Hardlett 20 years old Winter

(Traditional age reckoning)

Status: Goldonia Kingdom Viscount Eastern Independent Army Commander Troop Count 2000

Feudal Lord of Arkland Southeast Area

Assets: 80 gold (silver and below not counted)

Weapons: Dual Crater (large sword), Custom-made large spear

Equipment: Black Cloak (Cursed)

Family: Nonna (wife), Carla (concubine), Mel (concubine), Sue (daughter),

Melissa, Maria, Rita, Kuu, Ruu, Catherine (commuting)

Servants: Sebastian (butler), Miti, Alma, Kroll, Nina

Subordinates: Celia (adjutant), Irijina (private army commander),

Leopolt (Independent army vice-commander), Schwartz (horse), Adolph (domestic affairs official)

Sexual Partners: 40, children who have been born: 6

CHAPTER 63

EASTERN INDEPENDENT ARMY MOVES OUT

–Aegir POV–

“All troops move out!”

On my orders, the eastern independent army formed into ranks and headed south onto the highway. Our objective is the maintenance of peace in Count Radhalde’s territory as well as my own. When we entered Erich’s territory, the army spreads out horizontally, lining up and marching.

“If you think about it tactically, it’s such an idiotic formation.”

Stretching the army sideways and advancing is the height of stupidity. On top of being able to be spotted by enemies from far away, it is vulnerable to all sorts of attacks.

“Our goal is to bluff. There shouldn’t be any problems.”

Leopolt stands beside me. The purpose of this stupid march is for it to be witnessed by everyone.

Both thieves and villagers will be able to see these 2000 soldiers if they are closeby.

The shady ones will be shaken up and those who aren’t will feel secure. That in itself will be effective enough.

The soldiers were worried about the villagers coming to riot, but nothing happened. Even though it’s against my will, the warped rumors about me are doing their job.

“His strength is like that of a fierce god.”

With the town behind him, he didn’t take a single step backwards against the approaching tens of thousands of enemies while cutting down 200 people. He is kind to women, but those who stir up unrest will be mercilessly crushed....

During the establishment ceremony, it seemed to me that the soldiers’ eyes towards

me seemed scared for some reason. If a person identical to that of the descriptions in the rumors appeared, I would be scared too. It's Erich's fault, since the rumors originated from him.

From now on, the soldiers will get to work under my command. Eventually, they will see the truth and get used to it.

"Leopolt, divide the troops and exterminate the bandits. I will leave Erich's territory to you while I will continue to head to Rafen and clean up my territory. It should be over in a week."

"Yes. I understand."

Leopolt will take command of the troops of the eastern independent army as the vice-commander.

"And me!? What am I supposed to do!?"

Celia appeals next to me. There's the difference in the size of horses too, but her head is positioned in the perfect place, although she'd get angry if I say she's in the perfect position to be my armrest.

"You will take the spear cavalry and stay vigilant on the outer circumference of the main squad until we reach Rafen. Inspect as many forests and brushes and other suspicious places as possible, that will probably cause the bandits to run away."

For the small number of thieves, a group of cavalry is a nightmare. Just by seeing their appearance, they will run away in a hurry.

"You don't need to refrain yourself for the escaping bandits. If possible, eliminate all of them."

"Roger that! Cavalry, follow me!"

Following Celia's orders, the spear cavalry gallops off. At first, the soldiers looked down on her, but after she knocked out two large men who rubbed her ass, they acknowledged her. The finishing moves were a kick in the crotch, and a high kick to the chin.

Along with the growth of Celia's body, she's also steadily growing stronger. She has always been a genius at fighting but was limited in what she could do because of her small stature. As long as her body grows, it looks like things will turn out splendidly.

Her parts as a woman are also growing, she has surpassed Maria in the breast race and has gotten in range of Kuu and Catherine. The enthusiastic Celia is already eager to overthrow Nonna, but that's a reckless challenge. A man may become a king, but a king cannot become a god. This is similar to that.

When I was thinking about Celia and the breast competition, a messenger came. Celia, who just separated from us earlier, has immediately discovered bandits, and seems to be attacking them. They sent a messenger to give a report as a precaution, but they are overwhelmingly advantageous, and reinforcements seem unnecessary.

Even if I were to send reinforcements, it would be difficult for them to keep up with the galloping cavalry.

"As I thought, the spear cavalry are quite convenient to use."

The spear cavalry that Celia took with her earlier is just as their name suggests – cavalry equipped with spears. Their weapon is a powerful and large spear but comparatively, their armor is relatively weak, being only leather armor. The horses are also not quite protected and are pretty much bare naked.

It's like equipping a common light cavalry, used in scouting and as messengers, with a full-blown spear. If long spearmen challenge them up front or if they become a target for the archers, they will suffer large amounts of casualties. In battles with cavalry alike, they will also be put in a disadvantageous position.

However, they are lightweight and are able to move faster than heavy cavalry who have donned metal armor. Their horses will also be less fatigued so their endurance will be higher. Still, they are sufficient enough to do things like jousting. For a territory with such a wide area, they are the ideal unit to cover the ground quickly.



Gaining a full-scale military, the public order of Erich's and my territory will improve rapidly. The clean up operation will pretty much destroy all the bandits within my territory in one week's time since my arrival.

Meanwhile, the ones directly responsible for the misconducts committed by the government officials, which are spreading like disease within Erich's territory, are being removed. With soldiers moving around within the territory, they can't do things like setting up illegal checking stations or collaborate with unlawful people in committing robbery.

"There's nothing I can do about the private tax set up by the acting official though."

"Just by reducing the type of exploitations, the citizens will take it as good news. In the first place, it is none of our business what happens to the citizens of other feudal lords. Our only job is to maintain the peace."

That's true, but I want Celia to become a little bit nicer. However, what she says is logically sound. Corruption and those other things fall under their domestic affairs, so Erich should take care of it himself.

"I told him that the acting official is doing whatever he pleases. He can take care of the rest."

Celia sighed, then reacted with a twitch as she pointed to something.

"On the right! A group of something that looks like bandits are escaping from the forest!"

So there were still some remaining. These guys are as stubborn as they are stupid. The army has already rampaged a whole bunch. It would be smart if they just ran away immediately. It's finished as soon as they get discovered, and they were instantly captured without any resistance or anyone escaping.

"They are claiming that they are hunters though. What should we do?"

There aren't any villages around here. When they judged they couldn't escape, they decided to pretend to be citizens who have been stepped on, and not only are their actions slow, they also don't know when to give up. There is no redeeming them.

I swing my hand down to give the signal. Instantly, the bandits were pierced one after the other by spears.

“I didn’t think there would be this many bandits in this poor area, but there were quite a few of them.”

Thinking about the current location, they aren’t aiming to get the villagers or peddlers. They are probably trying to capture citizens migrating from Treia and sell them as slaves or something.

“But we only got these guys from the first day of going around. It must mean that there aren’t anymore right?”

“I guess, let’s finish up today’s sweep all at once. All that’s left is the usual security and there will be no problems.”

Cheers rose up from the soldiers. They’ve probably gotten sick of searching for dirty bandits in this barren land.

“All troops change course! Head towards Rafen!”

The divided team of Leopolt should also be returning pretty soon.



“You did well to come back.”

“The mission has been completed. The local security guards have been relieved of their duties.”

“The three of us have gathered today!”

The ones who came to greet me when we returned to Rafen are Adolph, Leopolt and also Irijina. Irijina’s duty was to establish the private army, so she didn’t participate in the suppression operation and was in the town recruiting soldiers all this time.

“Good work.”

“Nah, it wasn’t like there were powerful enemies or anything. It was just ordinary work.”

“We have a bit of a problem here.”

Adolph interjected. His frankness is impressive.

“What’s wrong? Have the immigrants not gathered as much as you expected?”

“No, the opposite. Many more immigrants than expected are coming in.”

“Really, then isn’t that not a problem?”

Adolph sighed. Celia’s eyes shoot up. No matter which country he is in, he will eventually be thrown into the dungeon.

“It isn’t convenient to have too many as well. We need to ensure that they have food and houses, and didn’t we say that we would compensate them for their labor and help support them.”

Was that how it was? I wasn’t really listening. Celia is nodding so I guess that’s right.

“If there are too many people, then why not have them live here in Rafen and extend the town? It’s not like the only way to live is to be a farming family.”

“Things such as new jobs in this remote town... they exist, huh.”

Right, they do. They exist in the garrison containing 2000 soldiers, which is located on the outskirts of the town consisting of 400 people. On their days of rest, even those guys will drink alcohol, eat food, and may even change their clothes.

Right now, the town doesn’t have the maximum number of residents, so we can let them all live in the garrison, but if possible, I think everyone would want to eat and drink in the town. Thinking about the morale of the soldiers, extension of the town is preferable as well.

“That’s good. Unlike head tax and harvest tax, business tax comes into our hand as daily income. The salaries of the soldiers paid by the royal family will be reduced indirectly on our side!”

I haven’t thought about it to that extent though.

“That should be fine, let’s do it. However, in the short while until we get on track, I’ll

be paying from my own pocket. The 200 gold that was given to me may be a little tight.”

“Money isn’t an issue. We just need to solve this problem first.”

“Huh...? Can you tell me the reason?”

I can’t say that it’s because the wife of a noble that I’ve embraced in the past is coming with gifts. Even so, it’s nice to expect a woman’s money for the management of our territory.

If my hopes are off, it’ll be fine if I borrow from Erich. It shouldn’t matter too much; if he’s able to throw such a grand ball, he should have money to spare.

“Anyways, just do as you said. You’re able to do so with the 200 gold I’ve given you for now, right?”

“I understand. It’s because the feudal lord is Hardlett-sama. I will do as you say, but there is one more troubling thing.”

There is still something?

“It’s about the origin of their immigration. A large number of people are coming from Treia’s occupied land in the west, which is expected, but there are increasing numbers coming from the Goldonia’s occupied land in the northwest. The rumors of our territory seems to be spreading all across the lands of former Arkland.”

That is certainly bad. Pulling citizens from the other nobles of Goldonia means...

“Alright, then this is a secret. We’ll deal with it when they start storming in.”

There’s no reason to purposely tell anyone what we know. Perhaps we will be able to pull through.

Thus our policies have been decided. I will have to return to the capital again after resting for a few days. It’s quite hectic, but Claudia’s reception is ordered by the king.

Although I’m not bragging, I can tell from looking at the letters that she’s quite into me. It will be impossible to stay for a week and go back. It might become a drawn out battle.

“Count Malordol’s wife’s reception duties, is it? If you’re together with the wife of a high class noble, manners are tiresome and you may have to go along with many of her selfish actions. You have my sympathies.”

Adolph’s words are not accurate. Claudia will definitely not get angry if I drink alcohol in front of her, rest my feet on the desk, or even if I rub her ass. And I can easily imagine her coming towards me with wet eyes.

The other party has come with a considerable amount of resolve. I will need a suitable amount of resolve as well. I will quickly rest up and recharge my energy today.

“Then, I’ll be taking a rest, Celia, Irijina, I’ll give you lots of love.”

“Don’t say it with such a loud voice!... I will accompany you.”

“Aah! It’s been such a long time. I’m counting on you lots!”

I hug their shoulders and head towards the bedroom. Leopolt remains expressionless while Adolph spreads both hands and shrugs his shoulders.

“Ah!”

I turn my head to look at the person who made a sound. It’s the woman that I’ve saved some time in the past, and she has come for a night visit huh? When I see her holding a mop, it seems she has been cleaning in the mansion.

“So you’ve been cleaning?”

“Ah, yes! I was just wondering if I could be near you, even for a little bit.”

What a cutie, although I don’t remember her name.

“Are you going to come too?”

“Wha-!”

“Nu-! A new face?”

“...I will be in your care.”

Celia looks dissatisfied, but when I pet her some, she cheers up. Irijina is talking about something with the girl.

“Listen, Hardlett-dono is amazing!”

“Yes, I am aware. It’s something like this right.”

The woman spreads her hands.

“No, no! When he gets fired up it becomes like this!”

With three people accompanying me, I enter the bedroom. Why don’t I practice for the upcoming decisive battle?



“Ah! Ahn! That place is no good!”

“How about here? Hm, what a cute clit.”

Irijina and Celia are embracing each other on top of the bed. Celia resisted at first, but after I promised to watch all the way, and forbidding to have kisses, she reluctantly accepted to be embraced by another woman. Because there is a difference in size between them, Irijina raised her body halfway, holds up Celia and the both of them are caressing each other’s genitals.

“Irijina-san! Don’t be so rough please... that’s the precious place that I offered to Aegir-sama!”

“M-my bad, alright! Gently... how’s this?!”

“Don’t put three fingers in so suddenly either!! You-!”

“Wa-! It’s impossible to put it in up to the wrist! Hey! Aren’t you breaking it?!”

I sit there on the sofa and watch the scene from the front. It’s fun to watch girls entangling themselves like this too.

“Don’t be so rough, you two. What if you used your mouth?”

“...Uuuuu, I can’t believe I’m going to lick a woman’s hole.”

“Celia’s hole is small! Ooh, the insides are a pretty pink color!”

If it’s with the mouth, then it shouldn’t get that rough.

“That’s good, continue just like that. That’s right, slowly lick the rod.”

And the woman that I brought along was lying sideways on the sofa, crawling her tongue on my cock. I have taken her virginity but she has no experience servicing with her mouth. She would fall in love and get married in the future. If she were to learn some felatio techniques, it would certainly make the man happy, so that’s why I’m teaching her.

“Uu-!! I want to lick Aegir-sama’s thing too.”

“I don’t mind licking Celia’s place though!”

Slurping sounds echo from the three of them, and the entangling from the girls is gradually getting more exciting. As soon as Irijina sticks her tongue deep into Celia, her feet stretched out.

“Aah-!”

“Hn? Liquid came out? Did you climax?”

“I did not! I absolutely did not! It’s impossible for anyone to make me, other than Aegir-sama!”

From the movement of her feet, she probably came a little. Why don’t I help her?

“Celia, face this way. Climax while I’m looking.”

“Ye... yes. I understand.”

Celia is teasing her own breasts and calling my name repeatedly while Irijina is licking

her genitals.

“Aegir-sama, I like you. I love you! Already... no goooooood!!”

There is a little distance between us but Celia screams loudly and sticks out her hand towards me as she climaxes. With this, she will think that she climaxed according to my instructions.

“Nn, nn, ngho!”

The woman is working hard at servicing me between my legs. It’s about time that I give her a reward too.

I pick her up and place her on my lap. She prepares herself to finally get penetrated but sorry, first I need to have Celia be my partner. I put my hands on her crotch. One hand rubs the enlarged clit, the other enters her hole. In order to get her to climax, I concentrate my attacks on her sensitive spots.

There’s no way that a woman who was a virgin till just recently could resist.

“Hiiiiiiih-!!”

Her legs spring up amusingly and her neck shakes. I stop to peel back the skin covering the clit forcibly, after her entire body trembles for a while, she bites her own arm.

“Woah!!”

She bit strong enough for blood to ooze so I was going to open her mouth, but she already lost her mind. With splashes here and there, she sprays her liquid and sticks out her tongue. I embrace her until her convulsions calm down, and after confirming she has lost consciousness, I let her sleep on the sofa.

“I can finally feel good too! I’m counting on you!”

I swing my erect cock and place it on Irijina. Celia has also resurrected, and without delay, pleads for the kisses that Irijina was not permitted to do to her.

“Take it in your mouth, the better one will get their womb inflated.”

The two women forgot about the earlier entanglement with each other, crowding around my cock as if competing for it.

After that, the exercise was reaching the peak of extreme, and the only one who could stand the next day was Irijina. The woman especially, whose name is unknown, got attacked by the three of us while she was still unconscious, and she had a miserable appearance with her legs spread open, her tongue stuck out, and eyes rolled back.



-Third Person/ Claudia POV-

At the same time, Coast of North Telius River, Port City

Cargo is being unloaded from a single boat one after the other.

“These are gifts to the royal family! If you drop them, you’ll be crucified!”

The sailors are complaining as they use more caution than they would normally think to use to unload the cargo. Meanwhile, a conspicuous woman dressed in an extravagant outfit appeared.

“Madam, please be careful of where you step.”

The servant offers a hand but the extravagant woman brushes it away.

“I don’t need it, I can walk on my own. Instead of that, please unload the cargo faster. My goodness, it’s just greeting the new king of Goldonia... such large amounts of gifts is unnecessary.”

In the first place, I have absolutely no interest in the new king. That is nothing more than pretext.

“Madam, the visit to Goldonia on this occasion will be the first since the changing of kings. Conforming to an official envoy, will the gifts be suitable-!?”

The extravagant woman used an open hand to hit the servant’s cheek, interrupting him mid-sentence.

“Be quiet! Hurry up and unload the cargo, you go help too.”

While still confused, the servant joins in with the sailors and moves along with them. The woman is the wife of a Marquess, someone that he could not talk back to.

“Aah, good grief! I am making that person wait. What will I do if I’m hated?”

The party overcame a considerable amount of impossibilities in order to get here. In addition to departing during the winter season, they forced themselves to continue even after the sun has set, and several carriers collapsed along the way, but still the wife paid them no attention. She just continued to repeat that she had to hurry.

The servants did not receive instructions from the head of the family, Marquess Malordol, to especially hurry, but seeing as how much the wife is saying it, they figured that there was some kind of a promise that must be kept with the royal family and persisted with all the impossibilities. There are only a few who knew of the real reason.

“Please treat that box with the utmost care. If you so much as scratch it, heads will fly!”

Two sailors hurriedly picks the box up.

“I wonder if he will fancy the offerings I brought, it would be quite dull with only gold after all. Aah, I want to hurry and see him soon.”

She embraces her own body. By doing so, it seems that she’ll remember the feelings of being hugged by a man.

“Please wait for me, my beloved one. Your woman, your Claudia is coming.”

The estimated time remaining is 10 days, but Claudia has no intention to proceed at the pace of common sense.

“Now, hurry and get ready. We’re leaving.”

The Marquess’ wife, who is drowning in an inflamed love, and her party has once again started to advance along the land route.

Protagonist: Aegir Hardlett 20 years old Spring

(Traditional age reckoning)

Status: Goldonia Kingdom Viscount Eastern Independent Army Commander
Troop Count: 2000

Feudal Lord of Arkland Southeast Area Private Army: 30

Assets: 70 gold (silver and below not counted)

Weapons: Dual Crater (large sword), Custom-made large spear

Equipment: Black Cloak (Cursed)

Family: Nonna (wife), Carla (concubine), Mel (concubine), Sue (daughter),

Melissa, Maria, Rita, Kuu, Ruu, Catherine (commuting)

Servants: Sebastian (butler), Miti, Alma, Kroll, Nina

Subordinates: Celia (adjutant), Irijina (private army commander), Leopolt
(Independent army vice-commander), Schwartz (horse), Adolph (domestic affairs
official)

Sexual Partners: 40, children who have been born: 6

CHAPTER 64

ATTACK ON WIFE

-Aegir POV-

Goldonia Royal Palace

Nobles are lined up dressed in formal uniforms and King Alexandro sits with an air of composure on the throne. I am standing there amongst those nobles too. Today, they didn't approve of Celia coming along so it can't be helped that she has nothing to do. The only ones with the right to be allowed to line up here are those with Baron status and above, and also the king's soldiers and servants.

A trumpet's sound rings out and a palace soldier dressed in an elegant outfit declares sonorously.

"The proxy for Marquess Albens, Lady Claudia Albens Malordol has arrived!"

"Let her through!"

The king declares exaggeratedly. All of us are waiting for her sake in the first place, so I don't think there is a need to purposely put on an act, but nobles are troublesome beings.

"Lord Hardlett, it's a state guest. You better not take your usual attitude, alright?"

Erich gives me a warning while standing beside me. That's right, when I was told that Claudia was coming, I didn't feel any sort of tension. Actually, she is a woman from my past, but if I told Erich that, he would probably faint.

The noblewoman is walking on top of a red carpet and the impression I got from seeing Claudia after such a long time was entirely different from before. The appearance of her flowing dress as she walks with her head held high made me feel that this was truly what a noble looked like.

Claudia bows elegantly as she walks up in front of the king.

“It is a pleasure to meet you for the first time, Your Majesty Alexandro the First. On this occasion, I have come as a proxy for my husband. I cannot thank you enough for this extremely kind treatment as a state guest.”

“You did well to come from such a long distance. I appreciate yours and Lord Malordol’s sincerity.”

Claudia returned to her normal posture and started to speak while smiling.

“I apologize on behalf of my husband for coming to greet you so late. Even though our family and your Majesty has similar blood flowing in us.”

It seems that in the past, Marquess Malordol’s family has married into the royal family.

“What of it, during my enthronement there was continued unfortunate war damage. It can’t be helped.”

“I thank you for your generosity. Although this is sudden... we have been entrusted with a letter from the great king, His Majesty Jutland the second, for Your Highness.”

A slight murmur rose up from among the nobles. Being entrusted with a letter means that Claudia’s visit has been officially recognized by the highest authority in the Federation, Jutland the second. Her level of importance has increased even further.

Claudia respectfully takes out the letter and the king stands up to receive it. Normally, it would be unthinkable for the king to directly take it. The Olga Federation and the Goldonia Kingdom are on friendly terms with each other, however, for many years the Federation undoubtedly held the advantage in the power relationship. It wasn’t just a relationship between kings, it was something close to a ranking. Even though they are kings, disrespect was not permitted.

“I have certainly received it.”

“Next, I will present gifts to your Majesty. Please take this.”

Claudia hands over a list of gifts.

“Good, thank you. I will also be giving you something in return.”

The king's aide hands Claudia a list. As if it was something natural, both parties seem to have been prepared.

"If they were going to do an exchange, wouldn't it be better if the both of them took what they want? They didn't have to bring the heavy stuff."

"This is called a noble's manners. Also, Lord Hardlett, I thought I told you not to make pointless chatter."

I got Erich angry. Just when I was about ready to thank her for her efforts and looked at Claudia, her eyes met with mine.

"-!"

Claudia's face became dyed with joy in the blink of an eye. Even now, she has a smile that seemed to jump out in dance and her eyes are glued to me.

"Then, let's begin the welcoming banquet immediately. There are people I want to introduce you to. Escort the Lady to the lounge!"

Just like that, Claudia was taken by the servants and left the room. She was desperately staring at me until the end. At first, I got the impression that she was a noble of a different nature from me, but those eyes are a familiar color from that of a crazed woman.

"At the dinner party, His Majesty will probably introduce you as her entertainer for the evening. Don't get her angry with your rudeness, you hear?"

"It'll be fine. Absolutely fine."

Claudia will not get mad at something like me being rude.



"This is Viscount Aegir Hardlett. A man who has shown achievements that makes my heart dance in the previous Arkland military campaign. I will let this man guide you around my country as well."

“Nice to... meet you, please treat me well, Lord Hardlett.”

Claudia's eyes moisten and her voice trembles. However, as expected it seems she still has the reason to keep herself from being embraced in a place like this.

“Good, it seems that the Lady is also interested in your heroic tales. Let her hear them while you guide her.”

“Yes. I will accept it.”

“With this man, as long as he has a sword, you may not need an escort either. Then, I'm counting on you.”

The king and Claudia arrives at the table and are chatting about some bland topics while eating. But I can hear a constant sound coming from the woman's feet. I can hear the inappropriate constant tapping of her foot that seems to be saying ‘Hurry up and end’.



The eating is finished and the ball starts. The nobles are consecutively greeting the guest of honor, Claudia, and with a sigh, she holds her head in her hand.

“...Please excuse me, I am not feeling quite well, it may be the fatigue from my long journey.”

“That isn't good.”

“Please rest.”

“Hey servant, bring some water.”

“If I rest a little, I may feel better. Lord Hardlett, can you take me to a place with a good breeze?”

She leans lightly on my arm, but from her gripping strength I don't think she's feeling that bad. Her rough breathing is probably not because of weakness, but probably due to her arousal.

“I understand. Please follow me.”

“Please take care.”

“Lord Hardlett, treat her courteously.”

The acting is perfect. I didn't take Claudia to the balcony or the lounge, but I took her to the courtyard.

“Are you alright? Lady Malordol?”

“...That's wrong. Don't call me by that man's name, I am Claudia. I am your woman!”

Claudia jumps into my chest. She wiped off her lipstick with a handkerchief and gives me kisses all over my face, like a storm.

“Since that day I lost you, I have been forever dreaming of this day! My beloved one, the master of my heart!”

Having said that much, I thought it would be rude just to have it done to me so I was about to kiss her too, drawing her face to me, but her face still had makeup. It would be troublesome if it were to crumble, and in the first place, I didn't like the smell of makeup. I avoid the lips and kiss her on the nape of her neck.

“Ah, you're doing it here? No, I am your woman, so I am at your mercy.”

Claudia misunderstands my avoidance of her lips as a feeling of sexual excitement and pulls her underwear off from inside her dress. As expected though, we can't do it here.

“...we're stopping Claudia. There is still a party to attend after this right?”

“For something like that, I'll just say that I left my seat because I wasn't feeling well. In the end, it is just for appearance sake, so how about it.”

I place my finger over her lips.

“Please don't make trouble for me Claudia. His Majesty has appointed me to be your entertainer.”

I can tell even with the makeup on top, but she is blushing and becoming meek.

“I am terribly sorry. I didn’t mean to cause you trouble. It’s just that my love overflowed... so please don’t hate me.”

I shake my head to say ‘that’s not how it is’ and bury her face in my chest. As usual, she has such intense mood swings.

“Do I look like a man with such little tolerance? Now, put your underwear back on and let’s return to the party. We still have time after this.”

But Claudia does not move.

“If we return right away, the earlier lie will be exposed. Stay here for a little longer...”

Why are you opening the front?

“I’ve dreamed of the day that I get to service you, and I’ve practiced, you know? I’m only using my mouth, so be reassured that your clothes will not get messed up and please enjoy.”

“Nmuu...”

Claudia takes out the cock from my pants, putting it while it’s still soft, deep into her throat without hesitation. The thing that isn’t even erect slightly chokes her while rubbing her throat and getting stimulated.

“It hasn’t been washed, you know? Won’t it be better if I wiped it at least?”

I just took a bath last night and went to the toilet many times. I haven’t done any preparations, so it is hard to call that place clean.

“Puha! I don’t mind. If your tool is dirty, then I’ll use my mouth to clean it. If you like, do you want me to drink your urine?”

“No, it’s fine if you’re not bothered.”

“It has gotten hard. Then I’ll continue.”

Once again, the erect thing was put deep into her throat, but it has gotten much larger than before and the enlarged cock is filling her throat up. It seems that she can't breathe so periodically she takes it out of her mouth and takes breaths.

"Is it big?"

"Yes, it's huge... Much more so than when you made love with me in the past... nboh!"

As if unable to hold herself back any longer, she takes it in and sticks to my hips. When I look, she has reached a hand to her pantie-less crotch and is fingering herself, making schlicking sounds. Erich said not to be rude, but even pissing on her doesn't seem like it would get her mad, let alone bad manners. The service continues while I'm thinking of stupid things.

For a while, there are only lewd sounds coming from the courtyard. Claudia sucks my cock quite well and makes me feel good, but there's just about no time left. On the small chance that someone finds us it would turn into something serious.

"We don't really have much time. Please do it rougher."

As if understanding, Claudia nods and energetically swings her head. The cock is sucked deep into her throat, she wants to vomit several times but she doesn't stop moving.

"Egoh-! Ngho! Ue-!!"

Seeing the appearance of a woman servicing me while making such sounds, my semen started to rise up.

"Claudia..."

I hold her head to tell her of my intentions and she nods. I have gotten her acknowledgement and I hold her head down with all my might as I twist my cock deep into her throat and swing my hips. If I take too long then she won't be able to breathe, so I ejaculate after swinging my hips a few times.

"Nnnnnnnn!! Nnnnh..."

With splurting sounds when the semen hits, I release her head and pull my cock out.

“Nngh-!”

Claudia covers her mouth after having it pulled out and looks down. It's because on top of such intense thrusting in her throat she had quite a large amount of semen in her mouth. It can't be helped that she has to vomit so I turned around, but she points her face upwards and swallows everything that was coming up.

“...Wouldn't it be easier on you if you threw up?”

“Absolutely not! Do you think I'll waste even a single drop of my beloved's seed juice?!”

Love is serious. In addition, Claudia wants the liquid inside my rod as well and is sucking it out countlessly.

“Then shall we return?... Aah, how nice it is to be able to taste this dick in this place... tonight, I'll be anguishing endlessly and won't be able to sleep.”

Somehow or another I was serviced one-sidedly. I was a little bit useful.

“Please make a hoop with both hands.”

“? Like this?”

I thrust my cock into the ring that was made by Claudia's hands. As the cock passes through the ring of her hands, it approaches her face. I repeated that three times.

“How is that? Will you be able to pass the night?”

“A-amazing!! This huge thing is approaching me! Aah, my mouth is opening by itself...”

Every time the cock gets closer to her face, she extends her tongue out like a snake. But it can't be helped even if we have started again so I pull my hips back after that one time.

“Well, it's finished. Let's go back.”

“No way...”

I forcibly stuff the erect cock back into my pants and fix my clothes. Claudia has a reluctant face but she gives up and fixes her clothes as well.

“Please remember what we did just now for tonight.”

“Yes, I will imagine your cock digging into all the holes in my body, and masturbate until I go crazy.”

It would bother me if you go crazy though. The entertainer for tomorrow onward will also be me.



After that, Claudia returned to the party as if nothing happened. After a short period of pleasant talk, the banquet finishes, and she lodges in a villa made for state guests.

“Well, Lord Hardlett, thank you very much for tonight. It seems I will be getting guided around the capital by you tomorrow but.... I’m really looking forward to it. Please tell me lots about ‘yourself’ too.”

Claudia uses her tongue to lick around her mouth and leaves. The nearby nobles probably think that we were talking about my heroic tales. But what she wants is something more intense. To prepare for tomorrow, I guess I’ll sleep early today. By the way, her underwear ended up in my pocket. It looks like an expensive silk underwear, maybe I’ll give it to one of the girls.



“I definitely don’t want it!”

“I don’t want it, it’s dirty!”

“I don’t want it. Please throw it away.”

“I don’t want it...”

“Well, I don’t really want that.”

“If you order me to, I’ll wear it... Uu”

“It’s too small and it won’t fit!”

“I don’t want it. Please use common sense to think.”

When I talked about the circumstances to those in the house everyone refused to accept it. Well it can’t be helped, so I’ll leave it on top of Kroll’s bed. At that age, he should have a wide variety of uses for it.



The next day, I was sleeping with Nonna resting on my arm, who I was affectionate with yesterday. She must have felt a sense of urgency from Claudia’s visit, so yesterday’s sex was intense. She never had much stamina in the first place, so at midnight she lost consciousness, but even so, her thin hand did not separate from me.

“What a cutie...”

I gently stroke Nonna’s hair. She’s probably making love to me in her dreams too, there’s a smile on her face.

“Uuun... don’t throw me away... don’t leave me... Aegir-sama~ ... I’ll do... anything...”

Her face suddenly changes into a crying face as she has a nightmare. I thought of waking her by giving her a kiss but before that, there was a knock.

“Please excuse my rudeness in the morning. Is it alright if I enter the room?”

If Sebastian came, then it must mean it’s important.

“I don’t mind, enter.”

I cover just my waist with the sheets and place the futon over Nonna.

“A notice arrived from the palace. It says that you have been summoned by Lady Malordol.”

Even though I’m the entertainer, it’s not like I can stay in the king’s villa. If the Lady wants to go sightseeing within the territory, then a messenger will be sent for me, and

I'll go to pick her up. It definitely isn't for sightseeing though.

"Alright, let's go."

I kiss Nonna before I prepare. She must have exhausted herself, since she didn't even wake up from my interaction with Sebastian.

"Don't worry. I prefer you over Claudia, you're my wife after all."

Nonna's face seems to have relaxed a bit after having the nightmare.

"Alright, prepare something simple to eat. I'm going out soon."

"It has already been prepared in the dining room."



-Nonna /third person POV-

After 30 seconds

"Madam, what about the preparation of the tea?"

"...Immediately would be nice."

She gets up slowly. Only the sheets were covering her ample breasts, but Sebastian is already past that age where he would lust after her. Nonna also doesn't pay him too much attention.

"Would you not like to see him off normally?"

"It's fine. When he has sex with that woman, he should be reminded of my crying face."

"...Is that so."

"Sebastian, tell Aegir-sama that I have been crying. When you do, he should come back and see me one more time before heading out."

"Certainly."

“Haa, I wonder if she’ll hurry and return to the Federation.”

Nonna mutters with an unsatisfied look and rolls around on the bed.



-Aegir POV-

“Aegir-sama!”

Claudia jumps into me. She looks around in a hurry but it seems there are none of the king’s soldiers. If this was seen by someone related to the king then it would be another annoying thing.

“I’ve kept you waiting, didn’t I.”

“No, don’t be ridiculous! I had originally wanted to call you myself, but the soldiers guiding me said it was customary to have them do it instead. I hope you don’t resent me.”

“That’s fine. If they find out about the special relationship you have with me, it will become problematic.”

“I thought as much, so I listened to them. Otherwise, I would have slapped that soldier and headed to where you are.”

Claudia pulls my hand along as if saying ‘let’s go’. Several escorts and caretakers tried to come along but they were all driven away.

“Annoying! I said that I am fine. Please keep yourselves busy here... ara, how unsightly. Driver, prepare the best carriage. Clara will be coming with us.”

Claudia scolds away the servants and turns around to be courteous to me. Indeed, she is too moody. I can really see the struggles the servants have.

In the end, the four of us, Claudia and I, the driver, and the female attendant climbed into the four-horse carriage and rode out to do sightseeing in the city.

“However, this is truly a gorgeous carriage. I didn’t think the interior would be this spacious.”

You may as well call the interior a decoration, as it was just simply roomy. In addition, wine and light snacks were also provided, and it is dimensions apart from the carriages I have rode on before.

“The six-horse carriage is actually more comfortable than this, but it couldn’t be loaded onto the ship.”

This is the difference in wealth between the Federation and Goldonia. A four-horse carriage is extremely rare in Goldonia, but a six-horse carriage has never been seen.

“And Aegir-sama... I don’t like the use of keigo as a formality. Are we not close with each other?” ²

I don’t need to hold back, huh. I’m pretty bad at using it also.

“Then Claudia, is it fine that you dismissed the servants?”

“Of course, they will just get in the way. I don’t need anyone but Aegir-sama as my escort. I do have this girl as an attendant just in case, though.”

I was curious about that. This shy girl that was sitting beside us since earlier, reminds me of Celia with her short silver hair, but unlike the energetic atmosphere of the other girl, this one is quite mild-mannered. She has a calm atmosphere that would not be fazed by anything. She looks quite young, but she’ll turn into a beauty soon.

“Aah, curious about Clara? Please greet him.”

“I am Clara. I was bought by the Madam and am working as a servant.”³

After Clara finishes introducing herself, she returns to the corner of the carriage. It seems she knows about my relationship with Claudia and is concerned about getting in the way.

“There were people around last night so I could take it in my mouth, but it will be fine in this carriage. Driver, have it go slowly. And forget everything that you have seen and heard!”

“Certainly Madam.”

The driver closes the window on his side and Clara shuts both of the side windows.

“It seems that my body is starting to burn up.”

Claudia instantly takes all her clothes off.

“Now, come make love to me! I have yearned for this moment... embrace me, no, please ravish me.”

It seems that she could no longer keep her composure. I can't let her be embarrassed any further.

When I stand in front of her, she takes my clothes with a desperate expression. I left everything up to the aroused Claudia and sat naked with my legs spread on the carriage seat.

“What a terrifyingly huge cock... I was fantasizing about this thrusting into myself last night in bed and earnestly trying to comfort myself... I finally get to have you bury it in my hole. I have dreamt about this moment many times.”

As if Clara was never there in the first place, Claudia spreads her thighs and gets on top of me. Even without touching it, her hole was dripping wet with juices and after using her own hand to spread herself wide open, she lowered her hips. However, her movements stop at the place where the cock kisses her vaginal lips. She's spreading her thighs wide on top of a man, and also spreading her hole with both hands. In this position that even a prostitute in the outskirts would get embarrassed about, Claudia looks at me and starts talking.

“Five times...”

“Of what?”

“The number of times that my hole has taken in a man since you last separated from me.”

I am a little curious as to what kind of sexual experiences that Claudia has felt.

“With who?”

“That man who comes occasionally to White City... four times with my husband and once with a male prostitute.”

I can understand her husband. Rather, it was me that stepped in and invaded on them, otherwise Claudia would never know me and she would still be his wife. But a male prostitute is... I guess I did hear that she was indulging herself in debaucherous acts before meeting me.

“Please forgive me. Two years is too long for the body of the woman that you lit a fire in...”

“Those five times, were they good?”

Claudia shakes her head violently. It's tough to suppress my laughter when we're talking in a position where my cock is supporting you while bow-legged.

“Absolutely no good. That man's crude dick and his pathetic sex techniques are naturally not even worth mentioning, but comparing even the male prostitute, who is supposed to be used to embracing women, with the intense mating that you have taught me, it was like a child's play.”

While she's speaking, Claudia started to rub her clit. It becomes a strange shape.

“That's why since then, I have not called them once. Rather, using a dildo and calling your name while masturbating feels so much better.”

“For you to look forward to it that much, I'm blessed to have been born a man.”

“Yes, so... well...”

Claudia moves her hips, rubbing her hole against my meat rod.
(Oh, are you waiting for my orders?)

“Go ahead Claudia. Let your hole have a taste, lower your hips and take it in.”

“Yes! I will!”

Claudia instantly drops her hips and it screws deep inside her.

“Gyaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!”

Even doing this to Melissa, whose hole is stretched out, or Irijina, who has a nice physique, would still make them scream. For the high class harlot, her scream sounds like she had a sword stuck into her stomach.

“-!”

Clara opens the window slightly and gives instructions to the driver that was asking questions. The speed of the carriage has probably increased because of the voices of suspicion from the people nearby.

“Are you alright?”

“Yes... the ones I’ve had up until now were all small so it’s being stretched.... Guuu”

If you’re fine, then I’ll take it as a signal to use my hips without hesitation. Claudia clenches her teeth so hard that you can hear sounds from her teeth as she tries to use her hips to follow mine. I place her on my knees and felt one stroke.

“Umu...”

“Does it feel good?! Swing your hips more!”

As a woman, she’s quite heavy. She should be several times lighter than Mel but her stomach is clearly sticking out more since the last time I’ve seen her. Every time she bounces on top of me, the flesh on her belly follows suit.

“Well, this is also a thrill.”

“? Is there something wrong?”

The mature woman on the floor is superior to a younger woman in that she has sex techniques and a ripe body with tolerance. The extra flesh that she has also makes it comfortable for me to hug her.

“It’s nothing. See!”

I grab her waist and give her loose ass a slap.

“Nhha! It’s good. Please invade my womb rougher! Please dominate the depths of my hole and my womb!”

We mutually rub our hips together as we build up pleasure. While I suck her breasts and pinch her ass and do other various mischievous things, there was something that I was curious about.

“Your clit is quite peeled back... what happened?”

I know that because she shaves her pubic hair and her past debauchery, her black tufts are protruding out, but her clit should not be so exposed like that.

“You did well to notice. Actually, before I came to Goldonia, I had the skin trimmed off so it would be easier for you to attack me! The sensitive clit is sticking out for your use anytime!”

It gave me the chills for a little, but she did it just for my sake. It would be kind of me to give it a taste.

“Alright, Claudia, rub your clit against me.”

“Yes, I had prepared to do just that. Except that if I rub it myself, it’s sensitive enough that I would easily squirt. I don’t know what would happen if my beloved person presses against it...”

“I don’t mind. Even if it’s squirting or urinating, don’t hold back and let it out.”

“Then... please excuse me.”

Claudia rubs against my hips as if to rub against my pubic hair. And she instantly climaxes. But, I hold down the hips of the woman who bounced up in pleasure and even more violently... as if she was sweeping the floor harshly with a mop, she rubs her clit against my hairs.

“Hiiiiiiiiiiiiih—!! AAaaaaaa—!!”

After intense sounds of water, Claudia pisses herself, in which she hides her face in embarrassment, but I won't let her off yet. I grab her clit with my fingers, and play with it in a way that a young boy would jack off when he just learns how to do so. Of course, I don't stop thrusting my hips up and stabbing her womb. It is normally a movement that would cause her to feel pain, but she is already at a point where anything I do to her would change into pleasure.

Well, it's time to finish things. I change positions and lay Claudia down, then pick her up in a flexed position. The slapping sounds are loud as I thrust into her intensely, and of course I don't stop rubbing her clit either. Claudia's loose ass is just perfect and feels just like a cushion against me, and she can't speak but can only make baby sounds 'auu, auu' while panting, making me feel superior as a man.

As I sigh and shift my gaze, Clara has an expressionless look on her face, but she is looking over here. The girl, who is the same age as Miti, seems to also have a keen interest in intense sexual intercourse.

"I'm cumming!"

"Leddi, let it out... ooooooooo!!"

Clara and I exchange looks and I told her to come closer. Claudia should not be able to hear anything at this point.

"Fuun!"

I thrust deep into her waist, and pinch her clit.

"OOOOOOooooo!!"

She screams remarkably loud, and she squeezes on me just like it was my own hand grabbing my cock. After enjoying plenty of that tight feeling, I release my semen deep into the lewd wife.

"It's coming!! The baby juice is comingggg!! The penis is sprayinggggg!!"

"...for it to make a sound."

Claudia moans loudly and Clara is surprised at the sound of ejaculation coming from the parts where we are connected. Melissa told me that it seems that my ejaculation noise is quite impossible. For people who have accumulated a large amount, it seems she would hear 'byuu', but she told me that for me, it was a sound that continued endlessly and it was something unbelievable that she has never seen before.

"M-madam!?"

Clara panics. That is natural, since Claudia's stomach is expanding gradually.

"Don't worry, it's my seed. Rather than that, it would be nice if you got something to contain it. When it withers, it'll spray out."

When I told her, I smiled and Clara hurriedly searches for something. It's been awhile since I got to taste this body of Claudia's and it was quite delicious. Until Clara has prepared something I'll make sure my meat rod doesn't wither by laying the woman's body in front of me, on its side. When it is wrapped in a soft body then it would only enlarge and it would be impossible for it to wither.



"Was it good?"

I gently stroke Claudia's hair, who has regained her consciousness for a while now.

"Yes, it's the best... I've always consoled myself by thinking of you embracing me, but it was several times better than my imaginations."

Claudia kneels at my feet and licks from my crotch to my toes. An act especially like licking my toes is unbefitting of a noble, even if it was just some sort of play, but such common sense does not register to this woman, who is happily taking the tip of my toes into her mouth.

Even for Clara, it was shocking to see the normally oppressive Lady licking my foot like a slave and she couldn't hide her surprised expression. After watching us have sex, the girl's mask crumbled. As I thought, she's cuter when she shows her emotions.

It seems that she realized that I was looking at Clara as I was getting serviced.

“Ara, are you interested in Clara? She’s just a young girl, but she is also quite attractive. I found her in the slave market.”

Clara lowers her head slightly.

“It was a year ago that I wanted a strong male helper, but I found this girl by chance at the auctions, bought her on a whim.”

As expected, one would feel a little unpleasant at how she said ‘on a whim’. Clara also has a somewhat sad face.

“Don’t say anymore than that. It isn’t a pleasant topic.”

“Eh? No way... don’t get mad, I apologize.”

Claudia panics at once. As if trying to cheer me up, her service instantly gets more intense. Clara probably doesn’t understand why I stopped her from talking since she’s looking at me with a befuddled expression.



After that, we went around randomly to look at the so-called famous spots in Goldonia, but the explanations were all extremely vague. In any case, I don’t know much about it either.

And because Claudia’s objective was to have sex while we were in the middle of travelling to the places and during our breaks, she doesn’t seem to have any interest in anything else. Although, she did at least listened to my heroic tales during our pillow talk.

The sun is setting and it’s time for Claudia to return to the villa. On top of being a state guest, she couldn’t be out thoughtlessly wandering outside the capital, where the security is poor. It is absurd for a married woman to do something like spending nights away from home.

“It’s too bad that we have to part... However, today was a rich day. Is it alright for me to call you tomorrow?”

I can’t say no.

“Could I ask for it to be later in the morning? Since my lower half will get tired.”

It’s because I’ll be embracing the girls at home after this though.

“Well, alright. And I have gifts for you tomorrow so would it be alright if I came by Aegir-sama’s home?”

Honestly, I don’t want you to come, but it’s for the sake of developing the territory. I have to properly get the things that I want.

“Yeah, I welcome you. My household will also be there though...”

“I’m happy. Ufufu, this is to show my gratitude. Please have a look.”

Claudia flips her skirt up and there are numbers written in lipstick on a risky spot on her thighs.

“I tried to write the amount of semen I’ve accepted! I wonder how high it will get before the end of my stay. 50? 100?”

She’s a lewd and foolish woman, but while she’s still fond of me, I’ll treat her kindly. In the short time until we reach the villa, I use my fingers to pleasure her, it’ll be her farewell gift for this day.



“Aah, I’m tired.”

When I returned to the house, the sun has completely set. I’ve been tired from the battlefield before, but it’s the first time I’ve felt such lingering fatigue.

“Celia, Ruu, have you already taken a bath?”

For times like these, I would like some healing from taking a bath with these two small animals.

“Um, um, I’m about to go now.”

“Yes. I just came out... No, I’m about to. I’ll accompany you.”

Celia is clearly wiping her wet hair, but she's such a cutie. If I call the other girls then it would turn into an orgy no matter what. At least I can forget everything and heal my fatigue in the bath. It seems like I'll be busy tomorrow too...



The next day

"My, what a poor-smelling house this is!"

Nonna freezes and the light from Mel's eyes disappear.

That was the first thing that Claudia said as soon as she enters the mansion. Other than an insult to the wife who came out to greet us and the one who picked out the notable decorations and furniture, Nonna, it wasn't anything much.

"Ara, what a cheap-looking cup... I don't really mind, but if it were to break and injure Aegir-sama then it would be a serious matter."

That cup was selected personally by Nonna to be used for guests. She said it was an appropriate item though...

Nonna's face is completely tensing up but she somehow smiles and bows to Claudia.

"I am Aegir-sama's wife, Nonna Hardlett. Please do as you see fit hereafter."

"Similarly, I am the concubine Mel Hardlett."

"Ara, is that so, nice to meet you. Ara? This is the spear that you were given as a reward for your merits in war. It's beautiful, it's shining brightly just like the brilliance of Aegir-sama's military exploits."

She expertly changes the subject. She is comfortably links arms with me in front of my wife and the others. Then she also addresses me as Aegir-sama.

"U-uhm, Lady Malorol? I'm Aegir's wife though..."

Nonna approaches without hesitating, but Claudia does not move from my side, nor

does her gaze leave me.

“I heard you earlier. You think I’m an idiot, right?”

“Grr...”

As expected, Nonna is making a face that I’ve never seen before. But knowing the power of the Marquess family from the Federation, she can’t come off too strong in order to not let her standing worsen. Carla would definitely hit her, so I had her take some sweets to Dorothea’s orphanage to play. The two sisters, Kuu and Ruu, who went along with her will not come back until night.

“Claudia, there are probably few things for you to see. Rather, you have something to give me right?”

“That’s right! Please wait.”

The strong male slave that she brought with her is carrying boxes one after another into the house.

“First is the money. Because having such a poor lifestyle like this is bad for your body. Aah, if I knew you were living in such a crude place I would have brought more...”

The household members and the servants froze when they saw the boxes packed full of gold. Clearly, it wasn’t just a hundred or two hundred, but several thousand gold pieces.

“Putting these boring things aside, this is something good!”

The thing was carried in.

“Oou...”

Even I made a noise that I’ve never heard before. It was a set of armor, an outstanding full plate armor.

“So that you won’t get injured in battle, I had the best possible thing prepared. Moreover, its beautiful finishing touches are befitting of a hero.”

The armor is definitely wonderful. If she was a lower ranked noble or a knight then the item would make for a nice heirloom. When light reflects off the set of armor, it glimmers radiantly... that's how it shines. Gold covers the steel's surface in such a way that leaves no gaps.

"So pretty..."

It is indeed pretty, since it looked like gold itself! The person who dons this and runs into battle is a genuine idiot. Instead of getting killed by enemy attacks, you would be killed by the stares of your allies. It would be less embarrassing to lead the troops while I'm naked and thrusting into Celia than to wear this.

"T... thanks, I'm grateful for this."

I am also an adult. I confirm that when I somehow get the words of gratitude out. Celia turns her face away; she's laughing isn't she.

"It's nothing to pray for Aegir-sama's health. Then there's this."

Claudia slips a ring onto my finger.

"Wha-!"

"Hey!"

As expected Nonna and Mel raises their voices. I thought I heard a threatening tone from Mel but it might be just my imagination.

"Uwaa..."

The next voice is from Melissa, she is quite knowledgeable about jewellery. But her voice is probably not out of admiration for the high-class stone studded on the ring.

The stone is certainly beautiful and big, too big. It's a ring with a jewel that is large enough to cover the two adjacent fingers. If my stomach were to bulge out, then I would look like an upstart moneylender.

"The last thing will be over there. Do it gently, because if you scratch it I'll strangle you! Ara, apologies, ohoho"

The thing that the slave carefully carries is a large picture.

“Well, behold!”

Claudia uses her own hands to unveil the curtain.

“~~~~~”

Silence dominates the room. In the living room that usually has many lively women, it was the first time that I’ve felt such silence in this house that I could hear the ringing in my ears.

The picture is something drawn in a realistic fashion, where a man and a woman are embracing each other. The woman is drooping against the man, causing her expensive looking clothes to ruffle, while the man is roughly holding the woman and drawing her close to himself. It’s a magnificent picture that looks like it could start moving at any time.

The problem is that the woman looks like Claudia’s twin and the man somehow resembles me. I would like to think it’s a coincidence.

“I had the painter draw the image of Aegir-sama that has been burned into my mind. It’s drawn well, isn’t it?”

It was inevitable.

The girls were speechless as their mouths were left hanging open, not able to complain. She sent picture of herself and the man hugging each other to the man’s house, whose wife is there. That hurts, it hurts too much. It makes me uneasy to think that maybe Claudia has already gone crazy.

“Please put it where you can see it. Since then I’ll always be with you.”

My head starts to hurt.

“That’s right, I heard you were in the army, so I brought something useful for you. I don’t know much about the army so I can’t explain, but I’ll leave it in the garden, kay?”

She brings my ear close.

“I planned to offer this to His Majesty The King, but my important person is you after all.”

It seems like half of these items are black market items. But this will really be everything, right?

“Do you know how much gold there was earlier?”

“No, I brought a rough amount with me, probably 2000, no, 3000 gold? About that much.”

I ordered the servants to count them. Miti and Kroll’s hands are trembling and they couldn’t really count it well. On the other hand, Sebastian’s hands are counting at an incredible speed, such that they could not be seen.

“5000 gold pieces... You were way off.”

“Ara, but it’s just about double the amount.”

As expected of a Marquess’s wife, her sense of money is absolutely twisted. I wrote on a piece of paper that I borrowed 5000 gold and handed it to Claudia as an ‘I owe you’.

“I can’t-! I brought it with the intention of financing you. I won’t do something like money lending!”

Anyways, I wouldn’t have been able to prepare such a large sum of money so I got exposed. As for the reason why Lady Malordol is providing money for me, the answer would come out soon when she comes under my control. The rumors regarding my women are horrible after all. Then, I would be summoned by the king and Erich will turn pale.

“Think of it as my pride, since it would be hard for me to live in peace with the fact that a woman provided money for me.”

Comparatively I don’t mind that.

“I understand. Then let’s do this.”

Claudia writes something additional to the note.

Repayment Period: Unlimited

Interest: None

Conditions: Once a month, write a letter to inform of the current state of things.

“With this, I won’t be distracted with the anxiety of possibly being abandoned by you.”

That’s fine. I probably won’t be able to return the debt anyways. Sending out a letter once every month is something I could do.

...Don’t tell me that I’ll be receiving those super long letters from Claudia every month.

“Well, it’s finished now. Does this kind of mansion even have a bed? Let’s talk about our love.”

As expected, that drove Nonna and Mel insane. I hurriedly went to take her outside. And then immediately after I pushed Claudia out of the mansion’s door.

“That woman! She’s getting carried away! That pig woman with heavy makeup! I want to roast her!”

“Nonna-san, here’s a cushion. And also a ladle.”

“Kiii—!! If she wasn’t a state guest, then I would have slapped her! Like this, and that!”

There were sounds of something soft being hit.
(Sorry Nonna, you did well to endure.)

“Mel-san? It’s dangerous if you hold that kitchen knife you know?... That’s the chicken that I’m planning to use tonight, but eeh!? The way you’re swinging it!! Blood will spray everywhere! There’s blood on your face too!”

It smells dangerous over here. I hope tonight’s chicken doesn’t hold a grudge and become a zombie.



After that, Claudia extended her scheduled stay with some kind of reason and eventually reached a one month stay. During that time, she called me everyday to the carriage so we could have sex inside. Some time in the middle, we started bringing lots of futons into the carriage and it was just like a moving bed.

We were making sounds of flesh slapping in a secret room with the driver as the figurehead, and Clara, the servant would act as a waitress and would wipe down our bodies. That would be our daily routine for one month.

And finally, it became the last day of Claudia's stay.



"Here you go."

I take a breather after the battle is over and Clara hands me some wine. She is expressionless but she became quite considerate about me.

During this one month, Claudia often treated Clara as something other than a person. And every time, I would protect her, rebuking Claudia for overdoing it. Thanks to that, Clara's attitude has somewhat softened, and during the times when her master is not around, she would now respond to my pointless banter.

"You don't think anything of seeing your master cheat?"

Claudia is completely unconscious and won't even budge.

"No, my master is the Madam. I don't even know the feudal lord."

I guess that's how it is, as a Marquess family in the Federation you would have many houses, so it would be impossible for you to have a grasp on every single servant.

"But isn't it hard for you to see it every day?"

Even though she was bought as a servant, she's an adolescent female. She probably wouldn't want to stay too close to the vivid scenes of the location where the cheating is done.

“No, I’m fine. Also.”

What is it? So I ask her.

“When we are in the mansion in White City, the one who is comforting the Madam is me.”

What is this woman doing? I nudge Claudia lightly with my foot.

Clara lowers her voice and brings my ear close.

“I cover myself with a futon and use the dildo roughly on her from behind. Perhaps it is supposed to be as if Hardlett-sama is attacking her.”

The both of us giggle.

“And the madam is also horrible. I was still a virgin when I was bought by her, but on that day she bought me, she stole it using that dildo. It seems she hated my thin body... look, the madam has a little fat on her stomach.”

It’s true that Claudia is close in age with Mel and she has let go of her body quite a bit. It’s natural, since she leaves all the work to the servants and only eats gourmet food and watches theater performances.

“And when the letter came from Hardlett-sama, she panicked. ‘Oh my god! If I have this flabby stomach then he’ll hate me!’ But on the next day, she would eat cake.”

As the conversation starts to get more exciting, naturally her voice gets louder. But that is a bad thing.

“...Clara, what’s going on?”

Claudia suddenly wakes up and starts speaking in an angry tone. I initially thought she was angry because she tried to hide her embarrassment, but it seems this time she’s seriously angry. When I think about it, Claudia is merciless to servants. More so if she heard that Clara has been tattling to me.

“I am terribly sorry!”

“You... intend to tear apart the relationship between Aegir-sama and I!?”

“No, not really, aau-”

Before I had time to react, she struck Clara with her palm. She didn't hold back at all.

“You-! You forget the gratitude of being bought! I should just sell you off to some brothel!”

The female master kicks Clara when she falls over.

The sound of a cheek being hit for the second time. The one who was hit was Claudia, and I was the one who hit her.

“Ah... aaaaaah...”

I adjusted my strength quite a bit so it shouldn't be that painful, but the shock was probably huge, since she sunk to the floor.

“Listen, we were just joking around. It may have been inappropriate to use her master as a topic of our conversation, but it's not something you need to seriously hit her or sell her for.”

Claudia is looking down. Did I do something bad? If she were to tattle to the king or to tell me to return the money, it would be troubling.

But things went differently in a weird direction.

“I'm so sorry, I'm so sorry, I'm so sorry, I'm so sorry, I'm so sorry, I'm so sorry, please forgive me, I'm so sorry, I'm so sorry, please forgive me, I'm so sorry.”

“Hihih!”

Clara screams unintentionally when she saw her master suddenly lower her head to the ground and apologize repeatedly. I forgot about Claudia's obsession with me.

The moment I hit her, she probably thought that I completely hated her. But this is a chance.

First, I kiss the girl who was earnestly bowing her head apologetically.

“It’s alright, I don’t hate you. I just want you to be a little nicer to this girl and the other servants.”

“Really? You don’t hate me?”

I kiss her again.

“Of course not, there’s no reason to hate you when you’ve done so much for me.”

“Aah, that’s good. If you hated me, then I wouldn’t be able to live anymore...”

“You better treat your servants, especially Clara, nicer from now on, you hear?”

I tell her nicely while I stroke her hair. I heard from someone that if you scold a woman once and then treat them nicely, they’d melt like putty in your hands.

“Yes, of course. Since they are your instructions, from now on, I’ll give them good food every day and buy a bed and furniture for them.”

I feel like something’s wrong here. But it seems like she’s trying to appease me even more.

“To think that you would be fond of this girl so much, maybe you want her too? You could have just told me that... Clara, flip up your skirt and show Aegir-sama your precious place.”

“...Certain... ly”

Clara embarrassingly lowers her underwear and shows me that pretty place. Her virginity has been taken by Claudia, but her hole is a nice pink color and doesn’t look used at all. After taking a long glance at it, I yell at Claudia.

“We’re already here?”

This is the entrance to the villa and the time is already evening, and it seems Claudia went back quickly to sleep early. The servants are hastily preparing for the journey home and Clara sits besides me.

“Is it alright? For you not to be beside your master.”

“Yes, although I shouldn’t, the madam won’t scold me anymore.”

After yelling at her, I made love to the frenzied Claudia and Clara, making her vow that she would never treat Clara as her belonging but as her own daughter. I told her that if Clara dies, gets hurt, or gets sick, then I might hate her.

Of course, it would be sad for her last memory to be of me yelling at her, so after scolding her I gave her plenty of sweet loving sex. I feel like I’ve embraced quite a few girls already but it feels like this is the first time I’ve seen one that climaxes just from my stroking and whispering of love.

“Why are you treating me so kindly? Even though you should be scared of ruining the madam’s mood.”

Clara’s eyes and face filled with vigor again. As I thought, talking to a girl as a human is more delightful. I crawl my hands on her thighs.

“It’s obvious that I would want to protect such a cute girl isn’t it?”

“...In the end, it’s exactly like the madam said and you are fond of me right?”

“But I don’t want your body. I want your heart as well.”

“I was talking with the madam when she was making herself look pretty and wondered what kind of person you were... but you’re just a women-lover aren’t you.”

“Do you hate me now?”

“No, it seems like I’ve been lured in too. My heart is beating so fast.”

Clara leans her head against my shoulder.

“It’s nice that you don’t smell like makeup.”

“If the madam heard that, she’d go crazy, you know?”

We smile at each other, and I take her hand, bringing her to a small shed for garden tools, where people don't often come.

After confirming that there is no one peeking, I flip up Clara's skirt and shift her underwear to the side, gripping the cock that was taken out from my pants.

"I only have experience with the dildo so... that size is scary."

"You don't have to do anything. Leave it to me."

"People could come anytime so please don't take my clothes off..."

"You don't have to worry about unnecessary things. Here I go. Become my woman."

I smear some saliva on my meat rod and grab her ass, pushing myself in slowly. She's even smaller than Celia and she may be the youngest woman I've done it with. Naturally, her hole is also small, and it's becoming quite the impossible task to penetrate her but Clara endures it while biting on her sleeve.

"Fuu, fuu-"

Not even half of my dick has gone in yet, but it seems Clara's body has reached its limit. As expected, her body is too small and I don't have room to attack. I hug her from behind and rub her breasts, moving my hips a little bit at a time. I don't know if I'm pleasuring her, but at the very least, let me give you my seed.

"Auu..."

Clara's body is trembling as I continue to fuck her, but getting experience from watching Claudia service me, she gradually began matching the movement of her hips with mine.

"You don't have to push yourself."

"No, it'll be easier for me if I move too."

(Hm, then I want to test something. I'll thrust a little harder.)

"Ah! I can't, it hurts!"

So I can't, too bad but I guess I can only have docile sex made for a child-like person. I move my hips slowly, and shallowly, while stimulating her breasts and her clit.

"Um, um!"

Clara is trying to tell me something and when I look carefully, her feet are floating above the ground. I got a little aroused and put a little too much strength into it so she's just hanging off my dick right now. Since she's already like this, why not lift her up and thrust into her. She weighs like a feather to me anyways. She's about half as heavy as Claudia.

The longer I take, the risk of being found increases. I whisper in her ear that I'm almost there and she twists her head around, closing her eyes. It is universal that women like to kiss.

I meet her lips with mine and entwine my tongue with hers, and without saying anything, I ejaculate.

"Nnnh!!"

It took an iron will not to plunge it deep into her due to the state of arousal moments before ejaculating, but I control myself and release near the entrance. Since I couldn't penetrate deep into her, my seed drips out of her, creating a puddle inside the shed. I hope that the gardener doesn't notice it tomorrow. At the same time as my ejaculation, Clara also lightly came, saying that she was able to enjoy a tingly sort of pleasure.



"How did your first man feel?"

"It was incredible. I also understand why the madam got so crazy."

"If she finds out, then something horrible will happen to us."

"Hardlett-sama will be fine. But I'll certainly get burned at the stake."

"If you get found out, say that I was the one who wanted you, and that if she raises her hand to hit you, that I wouldn't forgive her for laying a hand on my woman."

“I will do just that.”

After kissing two, three times, it was about time for Clara to go back. Just in case, I’ll take some precautions.

“Clara, take this money.”

I gave her some silver that she could use conveniently too.

“What’s this?”

“When you get back, send me a letter once every month, if you get interrupted I’ll question Claudia about it.”

“Women would definitely compete over these kinds of things. I understand, I’ll report my current situation.”

And thus, Claudia and Clara left. In exchange for a large amount of effort and a little family dispute, I gained a large sum of money and quite a few high-class pieces of garbage.

My mission of entertaining is also finished, and it’s finally time for me to head from the capital to my own territory, bringing my family along to the mansion in Rafen. That night, as if overjoyed that Claudia went home, all eight related people crowded around in the bed. The cork to a new bottle of alcohol is pulled out and it was a celebratory mood, Nonna especially has never been happier.

There is an even larger bed in the feudal lord’s mansion. I couldn’t help but think that I was being wrapped in a blanket of women.



Claudia’s strange gift

Standing beside Leopolt, we think about ‘that thing’ stuffed in the barn.

“This is something that was brought by her.”

“Yeah, there wasn’t any explanation or anything, but it’s made of metal so I have been doing some maintenance so that it doesn’t rust.”

The person herself doesn’t understand it either. She said it was a weapon, but it just looks like a large metal club to me. Somehow it seems the bag packed full of sand and the contents of the box are also part of a set.

“Have you figured anything out?”

“It’s something I’ve never seen before but I can somewhat guess from knowledge... though I can’t make a statement.”

Leopolt is quite knowledgeable. To me, it only looks like a large metal club that an orc would swing around. Hollow out the inside to make it lighter? Then you could have just made it thinner in the first place.

“In any case, it’s not something I could test in the capital. Until we can carry it with us to the territory, we’ll keep it in storage here.”

“Well, do as you like.”

Anyways, I can’t get rid of the fatigue from last night. As soon as they believed that Claudia was gone, they have been coming at me eight against one.

“Maybe it’ll be torn off.”

“People get stronger by overcoming hardships. You’ll probably increase the number of women even more, so why not think of this as training?”

“How annoying.”

Still, I wonder what this steel barrel is.

Protagonist: Aegir Hardlett 20 years old Spring

(Traditional age reckoning)

Status: Goldonia Kingdom Viscount. Eastern Independent Army Commander. Troop Count 2000

Feudal Lord of Arkland Southeast Area. Private Army 50

Assets: 5050 gold (5000 gold Debt)

Weapons: Dual Crater (large sword), Large spear

Equipment: Black Cloak (Cursed), Gold Armor (lol)

Family: Nonna (wife), Carla (concubine), Mel (concubine), Sue (daughter),

Melissa, Maria, Rita, Kuu, Ruu, Catherine (commuting)

Servants: Sebastian (butler), Miti, Alma, Kroll, Nina

Subordinates: Celia (adjutant), Irijina (private army commander),

Leopolt (Independent Army Vice-Commander), Schwartz (horse), Adolph (domestic affairs official)

Sexual Partners: 41, children who have been born: 6

CHAPTER 65

RAID

Several weeks passed since Claudia returned home, and I finally decided to move into my own territory. The final deciding reason came from a letter Adolph sent, letting me know that the renovations for the main part of the former feudal lord's mansion has been completed.

It seems that the lands the former Arkland feudal lords are ruling over are pretty bad, since the speed of the influx of immigrants are beyond Adolph's expectations and is continuing even at this moment. Since I have borrowed from Claudia... I absolutely did not let her finance me. However, since I have 'that' money, I'm not lacking in food, supplies, or wages required to hire laborers, though it's not like the maintenance of the highway and flood control would be better if I just increase the number of people. Nevertheless, I don't have to keep them digging and burying holes, and there is just enough of a labor force to use in order for the renovations of the mansion to progress.

Leopolt took Nina and went out a little while ago. It seems like he has some preparations to do as the vice-commander of the army.

"Let's take this and that with us. And we will also need this, right?"

"Are you stupid? They have chairs over there."

"Ara, Ruu, that's not good. That chair is sealed off because an injured person has sat on it."

"Mommy, that's scary, Sue is crying."

"Something like a move, as long as I have my spear, armor and food, then I'll be fine! Isn't that right Celia!"

"I'm different from you! I'll give my snack chart to Miti. I wonder if they have pastry shops over there..."

"Aegir-san. Don't take advantage of the confusion and touch my butt. Mooomm~~"

“You should be more grateful that Hardlett-sama is touching you. If it was me, I’d stick my butt out more.”

It’s quite boisterous when women go shopping, but this is several times more than that. And that’s because, excluding the baby, there are ten people moving, eight of which are women. If I left everything to the women then I would never know when things will get done, so I selected Sebastian to assist me. We can’t leave this place completely empty so we can’t bring everything with us either.

The ones remaining are the three from the orphanage, and two from the household; for now Melissa will be the female owner of the mansion, while Maria will be put in charge of managing the servants and have the title of female head chief. Even though I said managing, it’s just things like scolding them whenever they misbehave and giving them allowance.

“Kroll, you’re the only man remaining in the mansion. In the case of an emergency, protect everyone.”

“Ye-yessir!”

I give the sword a swing before handing it to Kroll. Kroll has been accompanying Irijina whenever she would train. He’s a child but if he does well, he could get a good swing in there.

“To die first and to run last, that’s what a man is. You got it?”

“Y-yeah!”

It has some weight to it, but he was easily able to support it from training his body through pumping water and chopping firewood. You never know what might help you out.

“...”

Celia pats Kroll’s head silently. It’s the first time that she touched Kroll on her own volition, which is cute, so I’ll pet her head. It’s a hilarious scene where a large, medium and small person are connected through petting heads.

“Um! Celia-san. I have something to say to you!”

“I don’t want to hear it. Then, shall we go?”

Kroll still has a ways to go¹, you’re supposed to stay silent and see her off there. Moreover, Maria is coming to lecture him. Well, of course, Celia is my woman. If you call the master’s woman, you’re going to have a bad time.

“He’s still a kid.”

Celia, he’s still looking this way, so don’t wipe your hand with a handkerchief. He won’t be able to trust a woman anymore.

The girls and Sebastian are getting in the carriage. There are several large four-horse carriages and carriages for luggage, and it’s quite magnificent.

“Aegir-san...”

Maria and Melissa will be parting from us for a while, so they get teary eyed. I embrace them with both hands and the three of us kiss while entangling our tongues. The wife of some passerby covers the eyes of her kid and runs off, but I don’t pay attention to that.

“I’ll be writing you letters every week, ‘kay?”

“I’ll write them too.”

The deliveryman connecting the capital and my territory leaves once every week. This is something that I forcibly pushed on the civil officials at the royal palace. It feels like this is the first time that my status is used conveniently.

“Yeah, I’ll be back.”

I said just that as I got on the carriage.

“Come over once in while!”

“Until I get my feelings sorted out, I’ll be troubling you.”

““Please let me know when you get another new girl!!”“

It is broad daylight right now, so there is lots of traffic. After getting looks of curiosity, bashfulness and a little disdain, we left the capital.



Going from the capital to my territory with a line of horse-drawn carriages at this pace will easily take a week. There are around 30 private soldiers, gathered in the capital, which are acting as escorts surrounding us. Even though I'm here, with this many people with me, I may not be able to watch over everyone, so that's why I prepared them. In the unlikely event that bandits appear and Nonna's teacup breaks, it'll be awful.

“Aegir~ you're not going to wear that armor? It's pretty isn't it?”

The thing Carla is talking about is that golden armor, which is enshrined at the back of a horse-drawn carriage and shining brilliantly. I thought about leaving it in the capital, but looking at its appearance, it seems like it would attract thieves so I brought it with me, along with the treasured spear I got as a reward.

“If you wear that armor while holding that spear... pfft!”

Celia covers her face and laughs. I don't want to look like some upstart rich knight.

“But there really isn't anything here. It's just like the remote regions in the Federation...”

I guess it's Nonna's first time. It seems like she's comparing the scenery which she saw on the way during the time when she was being transported to be sold as a slave in the past.

“What are you talking about? This is still just approaching Erich's territory. My territory is more empty than this.”

“Eeeeh!? But there are no villages or fields? Are you saying that you can get more empty than that?”

I pointed down below.

“There’s still a path here isn’t there?”

Nonna seems shocked, as she hugs Ruu who was beside her.

“Wawa, what is it? Uuu, your breasts are big... I’m being crushed~”

I also hug the resisting Celia.

“Haau, why are you doing this all of a sudden?”

This body pillow is for my exclusive use. And I’ve been resting my head on top of Mel’s lap for a while. I’ve been going back and forth on this road many times, but it’s the first that it’s been this comfortable.



If there are good things happening, someday, there will be an equal amount of bad things happening – I remember hearing that from somebody. Just as we entered my territory – and should be arriving in Rafen by tomorrow – when everyone was talking about their expectations of the new house, a scream pierces through everyone.

“Enemy attack—-!!”

“Right hand side!!”

“Get into box formation!”

The private soldiers shout loudly. They make rattling sounds as they don their armor and run, and I can also hear them unsheathing their swords. But those sounds get drowned out immediately by their shouts and bellows.

That’s strange, since it’s a relatively open area here. They should be able to spot enemies running at them from a mile away. Is it an ambush? That’s what I thought, but the answer came in from my ear.

“Aegir-sama!”

“Hardlett-dono!”

“I know... It’s cavalry. And lots of them!”

The sound of the cavalry hooves further elevated the level of tension. Celia and Irijina are already done equipping their weapons, and Carla is fiddling with her bow.

“Celia, you come with me. Irijina, Sebastian, protect the carriage. Carla, shoot the enemies if possible. Don’t push yourselves.”

Celia and Irijina jumped out of the carriage in no time at all, but the women who don’t have battle experience, especially Kuu and Ruu, are making a big commotion. Surprisingly being courageous, Nonna and Mel are staying calm.

“Nonna, I’m counting on you to look after everyone.”

“Please be safe.”

I jump off the carriage, and in front of my eyes, a man on a horse wielding a large machete, appears. I instantly thrust my spear at him to knock him off, but they’ve pushed this close to us? What is the private army doing?

“Lord Hardlett, they are not bandits! They’re a group of barbarians!”

As soon as the male ally said that, he was shot in the back by an arrow and fell over. I see, so the mountain tribe has descended. Everyone is on horseback... and they’re using smaller horses than we are.

“Tch!”

I hurl the fallen soldier’s sword at the barbarian on horseback, who is nocking another arrow. I tried to copy Celia’s throwing knives... but I failed, the handle part hit him straight in the face. Well, I guess it’s fine since he’s off his horse now.

“Aegir-sama!”

Celia is running over. Since the enemies are all on horseback, it’s hard for Celia’s sword to fight them.

“Aim for their horses, they’re light cavalry. Drop them from their horses!”

The barbarians are wearing a mishmash of leather armor, but their horses are not wearing much of anything. The saddle is barely on top of them and they don't even have stirrups.

"You're going to fight on horseback without stirrups?! Impressive!"

I deflect the sword of the man who was trying to pass through me and swing at my neck, causing him to drop off his horse. Celia quickly stabs him two, three times and he dies.

An arrow flies towards Celia. She barely deflects it to the side but that was dangerous. In this free-for-all, there's no time to look for Schwartz.

"This is quite random!"

I guess it's their strategy, but they are charging at us on horseback while maintaining their speed, trying to lop off our heads as they pass through us. For the first person's sword, I deflect it with my arm guard and pierce through his neck, for the second person's sword, I duck to evade his swing, grab his arm and throw him down. The third person saw the previous two get taken down so he thought he would just pass me, laying low on his horse, but I smack the horse's face with my spear and take him down to the ground along with the horse.

"Gugya!"

I pierce the two on the ground with my spear, and I'm able to hold out for now.

The soldiers who were in trouble cheered. But it doesn't change the fact that we're still at a disadvantage. Little by little, I can see that my allies are beginning to deal with them, but the enemies repeat their charge, coming from all directions, and they are toying with us.

"Carla, a rough estimate of the enemy count is fine. Can you see it from there?"

Carla took her bow and got on top of the roof of the carriage.

"Roughly 50 of them, all on horseback!"

That's bad, we only have around 30 here. Not only that, nearly half of them are already

injured and are useless.

“Soryaa!”

With a loud shout, Irijina pierces through an enemy. Her spear isn't that heavy, but it's perfect for the lightly armored cavalry opponents.

“How many?!”

“Seven! Teirya!”

I have three, I can't lose here.

Once again, three cavalry come charging. If you use the same tactics, I'll get bored.

I take advantage of the difference in reach, and take out both their arms before they can swing at me. Two pairs – four arms fly in mid-air, and the last person gets their head cut off while he's still in shock. It wasn't pretty like how Irijina defeats them, but it's a gross and flashy way of spraying their blood. To that extent, the effect it has on allies and enemies alike is huge.

After charging, the cavalry are looking to return to fighting once again, but they are falling one by one. Carla's arrows are flying at them. Her skill with the bow is quite considerable, even when compared to that of a person in the army. When they slow down, she shoots them down one after the other, and for the ones that are far away, she aims for their horses.

Seeing as how our resistance is getting stronger, they decided to retreat for now. They move after being commanded and instantly pull back.

“The enemy is retreating!”

“Don't let your guard down. They're cavalry, we can't outrun them. Don't break the box formation until they completely retreat.”

Carla fires off an arrow as if chasing them away, but one of the barbarians noticed it and used his sword to stop it.

“Carla! Get back!”

“Eh?”

The cavalry switched to holding bows and fired off arrows as they were retreating backwards. The arrows precisely fall on Carla and she rolled off the roof of the carriage, but before she fell to the floor, Sebastian caught her and pulled her into the carriage.

“Carla-san!!”

“What?! Did she get hit?!”

Celia and Irijina hurriedly returned to the carriage. Firing arrows on horseback while facing the rear, without using stirrups... There isn't anyone in Goldonia who can do that. No, there are a few who can hit enemies in the front while standing on the stirrups. They completely let their guard down. The barbarians let us measure their skill.

The melee is over, and finally after finding us, Schwartz came trotting over. As if sensing Carla's injury, Schwartz peeks his head into the carriage.

“How's she doing?”

“She took the arrow on the right side of her abdomen. It's quite... deep.”

“I used an ointment, but there's a lot of blood. You shouldn't try to move her.”

Rita checks her wound while Sebastian gives out instructions. The ointment is applied immediately, but Carla is sweating all over and her consciousness is fuzzy.

“Celia, Irijina, protect the carriage. Sebastian, look after Carla.”

“Please leave it to me, master.”

It's natural to be counterattacked when you are firing arrows. It's not considered a malicious act when you're in battle.

But, I don't care about that. I don't need any other reason other than my woman being injured. I'll just kill everyone.

“The enemy, they’re coming again!”

The enemy reformed their ranks and was looking to charge at us altogether. Their numbers have decreased a little, but they are still 40 strong, and preparing their bows. They’re probably going to loose their arrows to damage us before charging us down.

“The enemies will shoot their arrows on horseback at us accurately! Don’t lower your shields even if they come charging! “

I climb on Schwartz and we form our own ranks. There is already ten people, and it would be enough to hold on if they only have to defend the carriage. It’s fine to let them defend, since that would allow me to attack them.

Schwartz neighs, as if saying that he’s here as well. That reminds me, the one who was the most affectionate to him was Carla. Celia is also his favorite, but he prefers women that are voluptuous and wild.

The enemy charges at us altogether. My allies ready their shields, sticking their spears out from the gaps. I skewer the fallen enemies and lift them up while on horseback, then place them in front of me.

And then, a single horseman heads towards the charging enemy. The enemy is somewhat confused, but they wouldn’t move the entire squad just for me, so they have the 10 in the front fire their arrows. Their aim is unbelievably accurate, but that works against them. The arrows accurately stab into the corpses I placed in front of me, and doesn’t hit Schwartz. I threw away the corpses which turned into porcupines, raise my spear and thrust at them.

In a panic, the enemies nock their next arrow, but since the both of us are charging at each other on horseback, the distance is closed in an instant. My spear can reach them faster than they are able to release their arrows.

I mow down three in the front with my full strength, and they all fly back at the same time. There are some who were bisected, some who have their heads split open from being hit by the handle, some who have their bodies sliced halfway, and some who are writhing around in pain. There is one person who stops moving from the picture of hell and their agonizing cries, but I thrust my spear into his throat and smash him into the adjacent cavalry.

There is the sound of wind as an arrow is fired at point-blank range, but since the distance is close, I can also see the arrow quite well. I grab the arrow, snapping it in half, causing the man who fired it to scream and drop his bow. Normally, I would ignore the enemies who have lost their fighting spirit, but it's not like that this time. Unfortunately for you, you're going to have your head lopped off.

Schwartz's giant body runs amok among the enemy and splashes of blood dance in the air. A portion of the enemies are fighting with the soldiers who are defending the carriage, but since I'm attracting the enemy's attention in the center, they are lacking the pressure and not able to attack very well.

Two units head towards me simultaneously from the left and right, so I thrust my spear at one, and I grab the sword of the other, pulling him down and dragging him around for a while. Scraping the ground caused him to collide with several rocks and I let him go, but he's no longer living. One of the enemies gets taken by surprise and tries to run away, but my spear is faster.

I get a look at his face, but he's young enough to be called a boy. That's right, there are no distinctions between soldiers on the side of the barbarians, I've heard that their entire tribe fights. While I was thinking, I pierce through the boy's abdomen, shake my spear and throw him off.

Now that I look around, there are already over 10 pairs of corpses of horse and rider. I was going to change direction and head towards the carriage, but as I decelerate, barbarians line up together on both sides and unsheathe their swords, coming to slice me up. I swing my spear down on one of them, cutting him up along with the horse.

It seems I don't need to do anything for the other one. Schwartz comes over unexpectedly and bumps the body of the enemy's horse. The enemy horse is comparatively smaller, and the body of Schwartz, clearly many times heavier, hitting them caused them to lose balance, falling down to the ground, head first. If they fall in that manner, both horse and rider will not come out unscathed.

The battle around the carriage is also progressing in our favor and the enemy is getting disheartened to attack. I can see that they are not able to concentrate on attacking while hearing my shouts and rampaging behind them and the death cries of their allies. The enemies give up on attacking the carriage for now, prioritizing finishing me off and point their arrows at me.

It did not escape my sight. One amongst the enemy barbarians is wearing a unique helmet and is a man with a good stature, and as soon as that man points his sword at me, all the enemies change directions at once. So he's the commander.

He's a little far away, but can I get him? It would be annoying if they fired arrows all at once, but there's no choice but to do it. I pull my spear back and throw it with my maximum strength. It's a little too large to be called a javelin, but it makes a low slicing wind sound as it flies.

The spear that is dancing through the air is immediately spotted and the commander gets his shield ready. And a man who seem to be his subordinate gets in front to protect him... the spear pierces through all that and stabs into the ground. Just like when a child plays with a bug, the two men are stuck to the ground. With an incredible scream, unlike the death cries when they get killed instantly, the screams don't end instantly and echoes across the battlefield, causing the enemy to be clearly disturbed.

“—!!!”

I unsheathe my Dual Crater and let out a shout, squeezing it out from my stomach, while I charge at the agitated enemies. Being able to grasp the situation even beside the carriage, Irijina starts the counterattack.

The sword has a short reach when on top of a horse, but Schwartz seemingly knows that and passes through, right up close to the enemy. I bring my sword down and his head gets cut off like how a radish gets cut and I arrive at the place near the commander, where my spear is stuck.

The enemies who just lost their commander have already lost their fighting spirit, and are retreating in chaos. I did think about killing everyone, but I can't annihilate enemies who are running away without horses. It is regrettable.

I grab the spear while it is still pierced through the two men. As expected, if I were to carry my spear with the two of them still stuck on it, even though it's a thick spear, it might actually get bent. I place my foot on them and pull it out all at once.

“Gyuwaaa!”

“Gugyaa!”

The screams from the two people are noisy. I unconsciously stab one with my sword. The only one left is the commander.

I thought about asking him for information, but what other information do I need other than the fact that he's a barbarian. Also, with such a large hole opened in his stomach, it is hard to prolong his life. I'd have to ask myself if it would be worth it for him to live if I apply a large amount of the same ointment used on Carla.

"That guy is... possibly a prisoner of war?"

Celia is able to finish several escaping enemies, but they are finally able to shake her off, so she returned. She asks while showing a dissatisfied face. I'm glad that you're also angry about Carla getting hurt.

"No, there's no need."

I don't know if this guy is bad or not. I don't know if this was plundering because of their need to survive or whether there is another reason in their raid. But they targeted us and injured Carla. They were unlucky.

I place my foot on top of the man's face and put some strength behind it. The sound of his skull being crushed became the signal of the end of the battle.



"Load the injured people on the carriages and we'll be departing immediately!!"

It's the same for the soldiers, but more than anything, we have to bring Carla to a town as soon as possible. When the Eastern army came to Rafen, they also brought several doctors with them as well. It should be way better than bringing her to a nearby village.

"Is Carla alright?"

"Yeah, somehow, but her abdomen is hot."

It seems that Carla was able to regain consciousness while we were fighting. According to Sebastian, who pulled the arrow out, it's not a fatal wound, but it's not a wound that

you can rest easy about either.

“Uuu, can I still have children?”

“It missed your womb. Also, you had something way bigger than that arrow enter you, so it shouldn’t be a problem right?”

“Haha, you’re right. I got stabbed by an amazing spear~”

Carla laughs, and the surrounding women also laugh, but her voice was strained. The wound also hit the muscles and may have gone through all the way to her internal organs. There is also a possibility that it could have been fatal if we didn’t have this special ointment.

“I’m tired... going to sleep”

Carla loses her consciousness while lying on Nonna’s lap. Nonna hurriedly tried to shake her off, but she couldn’t just wake her up or anything so she stopped. It’s better to let her sleep until we reach Rafen.

The driver of the carriage switches with Sebastian. It seems like he has a high proficiency in this.

“Sebastian. Hurry up, but quietly!”

“I understand.”

He didn’t raise a single complaint at the contradictory order. The horse-drawn carriage picks up speed and heads to Rafen.



Rafen, the next day

“It’s better if we apply the ointment before the wound rots. She will be fine like this.”

The doctor says after confirming the wound on Carla. Everyone breathed a sigh of relief. Since the injury reached her internal organs, she would have to stay on a liquid diet, and it seems she would be completely healed after two weeks.

“After we just arrived at the new house, I’m bedridden, that’s the worst~”

“If you were to mess around immediately, then the citizens would get anxious. It’ll be nice if you just slept for a while.”

After hearing that Carla would be alright, Nonna starts to badmouth her again. The other women mutter ‘here we go again’ as they pick their rooms and organize their belongings.

“Hey, what will I do about my meals?”

“The servants will bring it to you. Please eat it in bed.”

“Hey, how will I go to the toilet?”

“Please use the tub over there. Isn’t it your specialty?”

I can hear the banter between Nonna and Carla. But Leopolt’s face isn’t affected in the least.

“The incident this time is a misfortune and I’m glad that she’s safe, but it isn’t over yet.”

“What do you mean?”

“The attack against Lord Hardlett is just one part. There are multiple reports coming from villages all over saying they have also received attacks. I believe that the mountain tribe is moving in force. Their numbers are probably ranging from several hundred to a thousand.”

So they finally came.

“So what’s going on now?”

“The attacks on the eastern villages are sporadic. The eastern army, in charge of maintaining security, are battling them individually, but there are casualties.”

If I just drive them away, I’d be going in circles, and there’s also the incident with Carla, so I really want to crush them.

“Leopolt, if we use all of the Eastern Army, would we be able to annihilate them?”

“It would be impossible to kill all of them, but we can crush their base, and stop them from functioning as a tribe.”

That should be fine, they took the first move from us, but counter-attacking after they attacked us isn't bad, just like in the theatrical plays.

“Order the squads that are guarding the villages to go down. All squads will gather in Rafen. Take the citizens from the villages and return here.”

First, we have to eliminate these pests. And let's do it thoroughly.

Protagonist: Aegir Hardlett. 20 years old. Spring

(Traditional age reckoning)

Status: Goldonia Kingdom Viscount. Eastern Independent Army Commander. Troop Count 2000

Feudal Lord of Arkland Southeast Area. Private Army 70

Assets: 5050 gold (5000 gold Debt)

Weapons: Dual Crater (large sword), Large spear

Equipment: Black Cloak (Cursed), Gold Armor (lol)

Family: Nonna (wife), Carla (concubine), Mel (concubine), Sue (daughter), Kuu, Ruu, Rita (imitation maid), Sebastian (butler)

Capital: Melissa, Maria, Miti, Alma, Kroll, Catherine

Servants: Nina

Subordinates: Celia (adjutant), Irijina (private army commander),

Leopolt (Independent Army Vice-Commander), Adolph (domestic affairs official), Schwartz (horse)

Sexual Partners: 41, children who have been born: 6

CHAPTER 66

BARBARIAN SUPPRESSION WAR ①

A LAID TRAP

–Aegir POV–

One week since arriving in Rafen, the town is seeing congestion like it has never seen before. But that is how it should be, since the Eastern army which went out to secure the region has brought the citizens back along with them. The town is crowded with people, and a strange liveliness is born.

“I have some leeway in terms of funds, so I can maintain their stay here for now...”

Adolph can't hide his dissatisfied expression. The situation with the town's security causes anxiety, and calling back the citizens from the villages also causes the farmland to become rough, so harvest can't be expected. As the domestic affairs official, you can't just keep quiet.

“This isn't a problem. I will settle it in one month.”

Leopolt is opposite with Adolph and absolutely doesn't change his expression.

“Attacking the army provisions, is it?”

“Yes. Although they are called the mountain tribe, they are actually nomads who live on the plateau. They wouldn't think to steal our land and plow our fields. In their attacks against us, they are looking to pilfer women and anything easily accessible to eat.”

But both options would pull the army up. The villages are now empty husks.

“Rather than seeking food, those guys just want to enter into our territory.”

“Are you going to hit them there?”

“That's right. But just as Lord Hardlett has experienced, they are extremely skilled in

battling on an open field. If they fight decently, then we would also have a painful time.”

Leopolt spread the map and placed several markers.

“Lend me 500 soldiers and the according amount of laborers. I’ll lay a trap that will get them.”

“I’ll leave it to you.”

“Please wait! You call them laborers, but they’re just like farmers. If you take them out to war, there will be casualties! And then after the war, it will hinder the harvesting and maintenance of the village!”

Leopolt and Adolph look at each other. Electricity seems to spark between them.

“The first thing we should do is win. Otherwise, domestic affairs will have no meaning.”

“That’s wrong. Regardless of how you win, if the land gets roughed up, there’s no use.”

“If we get crushed in battle, then all the abundant harvest will fall in the enemy’s hands.”

“If the citizens and land are healthy, then we could regain it after 10 to 20 years.”

Ooh, this is quite an interesting fight. The only fights that happen on our side is between Nonna and Carla, so seeing a different kind of fight occasionally is nice too. Celia seems to be highly interested too. I want to watch a little longer, but I don’t have time for this.

“Leopolt, out of everything we have, you’re going to bring laborers to the battlefield?”

“Yes. It’s essential if I am going to make a trap. Casualties will not occur either.”

This guy has been producing many results up till this point. I should trust him.

“It is as you heard, Adolph. He’s not going to kill the laborers. Also, having those barbarians right up against our territory will not allow us to expand our territory. We won’t know when they will attack us again like they just did.”

“.....”

Adolph goes silent.

“For now, the development of the eastern area will be postponed, and that portion of labor force will all be used in the development of the safer Rafen and its suburbs. Just as I said earlier, it will be settled in a month.”

I feel sorry for him, but it is war time now. I have often heard that an excellent civil official in peace times will often get in the way during wartimes. Just leave the war to me and Leopolt.

“Leopolt, take the soldiers and laborers you talked about earlier. I will also bring the entire squad as soon as we get prepared.”

“I’m grateful. Let’s meetup here.”

He points at one point on the map, and I agree. As soon as he finished his business, Leopolt quickly leaves.



“My goodness, it’s because Hardlett-sama is also a soldier. I’m at a disadvantage.”

I unconsciously laugh at the pouting Adolph.

“I guess so. Well, I was raised a mercenary and became a noble from a soldier, you know? You shouldn’t have asked me for an opinion on domestic affairs.”

But, I continued on.

“But after this battle is over, the land in this remote region shouldn’t get attacked by damage from the war. Then your role would suddenly be important.”

Adolph breathed a large sigh.

“Please, let this be over as fast as possible, hopefully with just a few casualties?”

“That’s what all the soldiers are hoping for too.”

I chuckle and leave the place. The troops that have returned are collectively preparing to sortie. Celia leaves a sugary treat in front of Adolph. ¹ She’s hoping to comfort him, but what are you going to do if your cuteness makes him fall in love.



-Leopolt POV-

Five days later Eastern Area of the Territory Leopolt’s Divided Army

“Release them!”

Arrows rain down all at once from the 100 archers. The goal is to surprise attack the approximately 50 barbarian archers who are hiding in the villages. They still ride horses on the wastelands, and are able to skillfully use swords and bows on horseback too.

Then we just have to shower arrows down on the top of their heads. In the barrage of arrows, their expertise on horseback is irrelevant, and if they’re unlucky, they’ll get hit by an arrow and die. In addition, these guys aren’t wearing any decent armor at all.

“The enemy is rushing at us now!”

“This is going as planned. Throw a javelin first, then as they get closer, throw a dagger. Don’t aim for the rider, injure the horse.”

As long as we drop them from their horses, they would be no different from common militia since they have children and women mixed in their forces as well. The only threats are their skill in riding and ability to loose arrows on horseback.

A portion of the enemy is able to skillfully use their bows to defeat some of our ally archers, who fired volleys of arrows at them from the top of the roofs. But the enemy, who couldn’t sprint away, is lured into the village, where they were stabbed repeatedly by a mob of infantry charging in from the side.

The enemy has 50 units, while our allies number at 500. Since it isn’t an open field where they can move freely and repeatedly employ hit and run tactics, it will only be

a slaughter from the beginning. As soon as the enemy stepped into the village, the battle was settled.

The group of barbarians are swiftly being defeated, and in no time at all, the small number left remaining also scattered away. With this, the three enemy squads will be vanquished. The enemy should also be figuring out soon that the worthless village has nothing valuable left in there, and that they should head to a bigger village. Then, we would move our large squad, since in order to defeat them we would also need to gather our own forces.

The laborers are also steadily progressing in their work. It will be completed soon.

I would like this trivial fight to be over, and perfect the preparations for the important war.



-Aegir POV-

Eastern Army Main Forces

I received a report that the 500 soldiers provided to Leopolt were rampaging. It seems they've already dispatched several enemy squads already. Having the soldiers hide in the village and perform an ambush, loading a covered wagon used to transport goods full of soldiers as a decoy tactic, and it seems they just did as they pleased.

The mountain tribe is powerful, but they don't really use large-scale strategies or any kind of tactics, so on the contrary, it seems they didn't overlook them either. Leopolt is the worst opponent for them. We are almost at the rendezvous point.

"A group which seems to be barbarians in the front has been spotted! Approximately 50 of them."

If I don't crush at least one group, then I won't look cool.

"Cavalry squad, continue on! We're going to trample them."

Unlike before, I don't have to worry about the women, so I feel more comfortable. Irijina and Celia have gotten strong enough to be able to protect themselves.

With me in the lead, several hundred cavalry charges into the group of barbarians. I use my shield and spear to block the arrows, as I slice the two that I charged into in half. Having their arrows hit the horse armor on Schwartz, they glanced at me, knowing that this is a dangerous situation.

The barbarians have excellent archery skills but the quality of their arrows are bad. It would be hard to penetrate armor made of iron or steel. But they always have the skill to aim in the gaps, so I can't let my guard down.

By the time I cut down the third person, the cavalry rushed in all at once. Before they charged in, many of the enemies were defeated by arrows, but they couldn't use their bows when I jumped in there. In the end, we relied on our numerical advantage to suppress them.

That's fine, those guys are few in number. If they were to engage us in a one-on-one combat scenario, then they would be the ones to die first.

"Crush them! Destroy them!"

I break the neck of the fourth person by hitting him with my handle, then I punch the fifth person and he falls off his horse. The fifth person was unlucky and got trampled by Schwartz right after, his scream disappearing just like that.

"Ha-!"

Celia's knife sinks into the throat of one of them with pinpoint accuracy, causing him to fall off his horse without a sound. To match her, I throw the sword that I stole, but this time, neither the handle nor the blade hit him, it was the side. Even so, it smashed his nose and finished him off, so I can count that as a success.

After taking out about eight of them, our allies became the only ones who were moving on the battlefield, and cheers erupted, loud enough for the defeated and retreating enemies to hear in the distance.



On the afternoon of that day, Leopolt and I were able to meet up at the rendezvous point as planned.

“It seems you’ve been killing enemies left and right.”

“And you’ve been defeating enemies in an outrageous fashion.”

Shall I strangle his neck? ²

“Is this the village that you’ve set up camp in?”

Leopolt has set up battle positions in a comparatively large village, although I don’t know the name of it. It seems that there used to be around 100 people living in it.

“Yes. Thinking about the terrain and our situation, this place is the most convenient for us.”

“Is it ‘that’ plan? Has it been completed?”

“Our part is completed, but there are still two things needed: For the enemy to gather into a large group and the weather.”

“So you were attacking the smaller enemy squads until now for that purpose?”

The enemy usually has squads of around 50 people... which is probably a single family or a single faction or something. For the trap to spring on that faction, the effect would be limited, so we would like for them to group up into large numbers so we can eliminate them all at once. For a group of 50 people, I would probably show them a sizeable force they could never match or just trample them though.

“It was effective. I have received reports from scouts that the enemy is currently gathering themselves gradually.”

“Then shall we push through by force one more time?”

My squad is carrying plenty of supplies. Mountains of wheat and casks of alcohol were piled in a place which stood out in the town. It’s so that the enemy scouts could find it any time they came.

“Indeed, those guys are simpletons after all. It’s because it’s Lord Hardlett that you could think of something like that.”

I've always thought this, but this guy is making fun of me, isn't he?

"My entire squad has already been accumulated but... we just have to wait to ambush the enemy now."

"Shall I scatter the cavalry randomly? Even if I get into trouble, I can return quickly, and on the off chance that they lose their minds and head toward Rafen, then I would need to keep them in check."

Wait a minute, there's only a few soldiers there right now. If they get attacked, then there won't be any people left.

"The possibility is infinitesimally small, but there is no such thing as absolute in this world. But if you are afraid of that, then what can you do?"

"You're right... Let's say our preparations are fine, so what about the weather?"

"Even just a little rain is fine, then it would be perfect."

Rain? Oh yeah, it hasn't rained at all lately.

"We can reasonably expect rain seasonally. If not, then we're just unlucky and I'll think about it then."

"Luck? I didn't think you were the type of guy to believe in that stuff."

"Even though I look like that, I'm still deeply religious. If it brings benefits, I will lower my head to any God."

That is what is called an unbeliever.

"Let's bring out some alcohol for the troops. As expected, the enemies won't come attacking us today or tomorrow."

"Well, the enemy scouts may take advantage of the dead of night and come. If they see my negligence and our abundance of supplies, then the possibility of them coming increases."

Celia heard the word alcohol and her eyes light up, but the only thing she's getting is the honey alcohol, which is more like honey than alcohol.

"Alcohol!"

Irijina shouts excitedly, but this is troubling, since if she drinks, 10 soldiers' worth will disappear.

In addition, she drinks it like water, so it's actually a waste of supplies.

Many soldiers got excited at the banquet in the battlegrounds where they risked their lives. Unlike the meals during peaceful times, it is all you can eat and drink, causing morale to increase dramatically.

"Aegir-sama, here you go..."

Celia attempts to be the one to pour me drinks, but she isn't holding anything in her hand. If I look carefully, her mouth is full. It seems she wants to transfer the alcohol to me with her mouth, but her face is red and her focus is wavering.

"Hey, who's the idiot who let Celia drink!?"

"Hm? Well it looked like she was disheartened while drinking the honey, so I gave her plenty. Is that bad?"

Just like I said, it was an idiot. I'll punish the two of you together. I'm going to get rough, so you better prepare yourselves.



After that 'battle' was over, I went out to catch some of the evening breeze and something interesting caught my eye.

For this expedition, we hired a few female waitresses and kitchen-maids to accompany us. Leopolt seems confident in his plan, even accounting for the fact that the accompanying women would invite attacks from the enemy. I saw a soldier take the hand of one of those kitchen-maids and bring her to a place where few people would go. I stepped closer to beat him up, but when the soldier saw me, he said 'crap' and tried to run away. But the woman grabbed the soldier's hand, bowed her head while facing me and gestured for him to take out money.

I see, she was trying to earn an extra source of income in addition to her kitchen-maid duties. I don't want to interrupt the business of a prostitute. So I turned my eyes away and waved my hand to tell them to get out of here. So this is what was happening when I saw a woman whose face looked really tired during the march. I surely thought that it was because they couldn't keep up with the pace of the march. Next time, I'll increase the pace without mercy.

I hear some splashing sounds, and look around, spotting a woman standing beside a well lightly rinsing herself. Her transaction is over, but maybe the customer was too quick and it looks like she can still do more.

"Ara, captain. Oh my, how embarrassing."

I instantly hug the woman who tried to hide her body.

"Are you still... open for business?"

A smile floats to her face and she exposes her body.

"If it's the captain, I'll open up a special night service."

With that said, it would be tough on me to keep attacking her until dawn, and it would hinder her day job. So let's just keep things quick.

"Let's head under that tent's shadow. If you so desire, I can do everything with my mouth."

"No, just your special part will be fine."

I bring her to the shadow and take my cock out. It must be because she just had a man in her earlier, but her special place is already wet.

"Woah, it's huge! A lady-killer just like the rumors..."

"Are you frightened?"

"No way. There's almost no chance to be able to taste something like this. I'm glad I came along with the army."

After touching her lips lightly, it entered her. When it was halfway buried into her, I stopped moving for a little bit.

“Guu... It’s too big. I think it can go a little deeper though.”

“I’ll take you up on that offer.”

I grab her shoulders and push my hips stronger, sinking it in a few centimeters deeper inside.

“Aaaaah!! There-! That’s the deepest part! It’s thick and stretching me.”

In a flash, sounds of my hips slamming against her butt can be heard. The sounds echo in the dark of night, and if you listen carefully, you can hear sounds of flesh on flesh. There is only one person among them who can though.

“I can’t get enough! If you make me remember this, I’ll never be able to go back!”

I use my meat rod to scrape out the remaining semen left inside her hole by the other man and add even stronger kiss marks on top of the ones already on her neck. Right now, just during this time, this woman belongs to me.

“Captain! I’m already going to cum! Do it rougher!”

To comply with her request, I move my hips intensely, pinch her nipples and pull on them slightly. Feeling the convulsions in her vagina, I swing my hips strongly two or three more times and the woman climaxes, moaning while arching her body backwards.

“Aaooooo-!!”

The woman squeezes my dick hard, as she collapses.

“Aaah... That was good. It’s been awhile since I came for real...”

“Sorry but I haven’t finished yet.”

“Ah, that’s right. I’ll quickly... wha-? I can’t stand up, can I take a break?”

I grin broadly.

“You can’t.”³

I let the collapsed woman lie down as I begin my intense thrusting in and out of her. I block her screams by giving her a kiss and raise her arms above her head, slamming into her without holding back. The movements of my waist also show it, but I’m nearing climax as my cock gets harder, scraping in the insides of her hole and giving her several times more pleasure.

“You have quite a nice hole. It feels good.”

“It’s too intense! Die, I’ll dieeeee!! Aaaaaah!!”

If she opens her mouth too much then her voice will leak out, so I kiss her once again. It’s about time I finish things.

I place my hands under her arms to support her firmly as I thrust into her deepest part, stopping my movements. The woman finally rolls her eyes back. I can feel a warm sensation from her crotch, so she probably wet herself. While feeling that warm and wet feeling, with a single groan, I ejaculate, continuing to thrust up into her many times. Because I thought that a prostitute would be used to these kinds of things, I went a little too overboard. During the one minute while I was ejaculating, I was thinking of these things as I caressed the woman, whose eyes are rolled back and is already foaming at the mouth.

After finishing, I couldn’t just leave the unconscious woman out here, so after rinsing her off by the well, I take her to my tent and had her sleep in a futon. As soon as Irijina falls asleep, she won’t wake up, and Celia also drank alcohol so her usual sharp senses shouldn’t be there.

I hug Celia’s naked body, who is mumbling something in her sleep, and fall asleep while entangling my body with hers. She’s pretty warm.



“uunya... Aegir-sama-! Who the heck are you?!!”

“NNn... Oh, I didn’t realize, a new girl?”

“Uuun, that thick penis is... Hm, captain? Good morning.”

“Get out!”

“Go get our meals too!”

As I wake up, loud voices of women ring throughout my head. Celia’s voice is especially loud so it hurts when she yells. As expected, I shouldn’t have put her on the same floor.⁴

“Here, I pushed you too much yesterday.”

“Gold!? Hya, how generous. Call me again anytime! I’ll do anything for you~”

“Hurry and get out!!”

Celia chases out the woman whose clothes are still all messed up. Then she looks up at the sky.

“What happened?”

“It’s a dark cloud, so it may rain.”

For it to rain so soon, should I bring Leopolt to a temple when we get back to town and kneel to him or something?

Celia looks at me curiously while I’m grinning to myself. Not even one hour later, droplets of rain began to fall from the sky.

That day, the rain continued to pour for half the day, then a clear sky returned. On the surface, nothing seems to have changed; around the villages are fields and yet-to-be-cultivated grasslands and forests. Nearby there is also a small river stream, but it wasn’t like the rain was heavy enough to cause flooding.

Two days passed with nothing special happening. Other than the ground getting a little wet and it getting a little easier to plant seeds, I don’t feel much difference.

The headquarters is noisy. It seems that the scattered reconnaissance cavalry

discovered the enemy.

“A group of barbarians are heading towards us from the east! Looks like their numbers exceed a thousand! They’re coming straight at us.”

It seems they have properly found the mountain of food piled up from the banquet the other day. After defeating so many of them, this must be their entire army. If we win, then their fate is sealed.

“Leopolt, so there was rain. Is the plan completed?”

“There are no delays. I’m ready to go at anytime.”

The marching speed of all those guys on horseback are abnormal. They will probably reach our location by this afternoon. However, measures are already in place. Let’s be at ease and defeat them.

Before that, there is one important issue.

“I haven’t heard much about the plan or whatever, but what on earth is it?”

A nearby soldier has an uneasy expression and is turning pale. Don’t be worried, you’ll be fine after you hear it.

And thus the war begins.

CHAPTER 67

BARBARIAN SUPPRESSION WAR ②

THE SINKING CAVALRY

–Aegir POV–

There is a strange silence as the two armies stare at each other.

There are more than a thousand barbarians gathered in front of us. They haven't formed any lines and look closer to a dumpling so the numbers can't be counted accurately. Everyone is riding a horse, and they could reach us within three minutes. For this amount of enemies to gather, it is quite a tremendous sight.

The troops I have set up camp in a somewhat elevated village number 2000, which is close to double their total, but in this open area without a defense facility against over a thousand cavalry, it can't be said that we have an advantageous position. And what we are after is a complete victory. We have to defeat them here without exception, and then chase them into their territory and thoroughly annihilate them.

“First, let's do things according to theory.”

“Yes. Long spearmen, defensive formation against cavalry, archers remain inside.”

The long spearmen, a staple of fighting against cavalry, will form a spear wall and the archers and bow gun squad will be placed behind it. If the enemy cavalry manage to avoid becoming skewered by the spears, then the only choice will be to slow them down by swinging the spears at them. Then, you would shoot arrows at them – it's common sense that even the ten mercenary captains know.

The ally spearmen advances towards the front. When the spears and arrows stop the enemy's feet, normal infantry will be closed in like an avalanche to bring it to a melee battle and kill the mobility of the cavalry.

“If this settles things, it would be such a letdown.”

Around me are Celia, as usual, the vice-commander Leopolt, and Irijina, who is

commanding my private army, which has inflated to 100 people.

“That will make things easier, but if possible, I don’t want it to be decided yet.”

Leopolt answers.

“Why not? Is it because the thing you have prepared in advance will go to waste?”

“That’s not it. If the enemy is defeated like this, then a large portion of them will escape. Based on the number of our cavalry, we won’t be able to chase all of them down. If we let half of them return, then we would fight again in their base. Thus, I want things to be decided here.”

Indeed, I feel sorry for the soldiers but looking at the big picture, there is also this way of thinking. I watch over the state of battle while hoping that they do things moderately without dying.

“Are we not going out there yet!?”

Irijina seems like she was going to jump in there now, but she won’t go this time.

“We have a plan. We will be waiting on standby here, the private army will not be moving from defending the headquarters either.”

“I see...”

Celia is trying to learn without taking her eyes off, and even if I pet her, it doesn’t look like she’ll complain at all.

Our allies are formed into neat ranks and advancing slowly while the barbarians are still grouped up and moving entirely as a dumpling. They have always moved together in groups of around 50 people. So it might be that they have never tried to act together in such large numbers before.

“Those guys are moving!”

Irijina shouts.

One of the barbarians, wearing fancy bird’s feathers on his head and shoulders, makes

me believe that he has some special standing. That man comes out in front of everyone and unsheathes his sword, turning to face our approaching allies.

“He’s coming.”

“Yeah, he’s coming.”

Shouts come from among the barbarians, then they face our allies and charge all at once. It’s hard to say that their movements are aligned, but regardless of them running amok in chaos, they don’t collide with each other or fall off their horses.

“It’s very enemy-like regarding the way they handle their horses.”

“I want the cavalry from our army to learn from this too.”

The distance between ally and enemy closed instantly. Our allies prepared to defend against the charge, they stuck out their spears to stop the enemy from progressing. On the other hand, the barbarians do not lower their speed and rush straight into the forest of spears.

“Don’t tell me they’re going to rush in like this!?”

Celia looks up at my face. She’s cute, but that’s not what they’re doing.

“Have you forgotten their skills of shooting their arrows from horseback? They intend to break the spearmen using their bows.”

But, at that time, our own archers will also be firing at them. If we end up going even in our first collision with them, then the scales will tip in our favor since we have the superior numbers.

However, contrary to expectations, the enemy doesn’t fire their arrows and continue to approach our formation. Then as soon as I was thinking this, they instantly changed their directions, starting to run along the side of our ranks. Then, while the spearmen are still facing sideways, arrows were rained on them.

Anticipating that they will be receiving them head-on, our allies had placed shields in front of them and directed all their strength to their spears, but having a hail of arrows fired at them at point blank range instantly decimated the spearmen.

Moreover, their attack is not over yet. Right after the cavalry fired their arrows sideways one after the other, in a flash, a succeeding squad penetrated through the collapsed ranks. If the defense from the spears are gone, then the archers behind them are vulnerable. They won't be able to defend against the charging cavalry.

"That was well done. Even though they seem all over the place, they actually employ tactics."

"That's right. I guess they were confident in their archery skills on horseback and didn't feel the need to form ranks."

Leopolt and I were calmly analyzing them, but Irijina and Celia are making a fuss.

"Hey! The vanguard got destroyed!? Then they would be able to dig into the center."

"Seeing their number, our entire squad will be crushed. Let's use our own cavalry to fight against them!"

If I didn't understand the situation, then I might have panicked and done the same thing. I give Leopolt a quick glance.

"Give the order for the whole army to retreat."

Leopolt uses his hand to order the trumpets, and several of them were blown. It's the signal to retreat.

The soldiers were all dumbfounded but after they heard it, they all began to withdraw at once. In this situation, withdrawal could only mean fleeing away. If they were late in doing so, that would have meant death, so everyone is fighting to be the first to retreat.

"Aegir-sama!"

Celia is noisy, but I don't answer her other than petting her head.

Seeing this chance at breaking our forces all too soon, the barbarians instantly rushed in like surging waves to settle the fight, mixing in with our allies and penetrating deeply into our forces.

“Now’s a good time.”

“Alright, do it.”

Leopolt gives the signal, and the flagbearer on top of the watchtower raised a red flag. That was the signal.

It wasn’t an especially loud sound, and it wasn’t like a giant boulder was rolling. But quietly, water was flowing into the battlefield. Unrest befell both armies as the water flows towards themselves. Floods are one of the most frightening natural disasters in the central plains, where the climate is typically stable.

The soldiers fell into a state of panic temporarily, but the chaos was resolved soon after. The reason was simple, because the flowing water came from their ankles up to at most their shins. In addition, it didn’t have enough force to push people around, just flowing calmly and eventually the water stopped. The soldiers even forgot that they were running away at one point and looked to each other to ask what was going on.

“This is what two days worth of damming the river looks like?”

“The river here is a small one, splitting off from the origin of spring water. Even after the rain increased its volume, it’s only this much.”

The prepared plan is this: adjustments were made to the flood control to expand the reservoir temporarily to accumulate water and after receiving the signal, the dam is to be broken and the water will flow to a wider plains area of a lower altitude.

“Although I understood it, as a trump card, it looks pretty pathetic.”

If it was a turbulent muddy stream that washed through the enemy and flushed them away, then it would be quite dramatic though.

“But in that case, it would also wash out our own troops... besides, although it looks plain, the battle has been settled.”

“Settled? Water of that extent at most could only make a puddle...”

After saying that, Celia widened her eyes in surprise.



The situation on the battlefield was turned around completely. The allied infantries who spread out only had their feet wet by the mud, but the disastrous scene befalling the barbarians filled our eyes. It made their earlier brilliant handling of their horses seem like a lie – some of them fell over together with their horses, some lost their balance and dropped off their horses, some who managed to stand back up but bumped into those beside them causing all of them to fall down – everywhere you looked was a tragic mayhem.

“What the heck is this about!? What is happening to them?”

Leopolt answers Irijina’s question.

“This land was originally low and had damp ground and is a place with bad drainage, and although the surroundings have flood control for the sake of cultivating the fields, a little rain is no problem but...”

Leopolt looks at the burst open dam.

“If you pour in a large amount of additional water, it will become a quagmire immediately.”

A quagmire is fatal for something like cavalry. The horses are heavy and will not be able to move on the soft mud, and you might even twist their legs if you forcefully try to do so. They could not possibly prance through on horseback.

The cavalry with their feet stuck are now sitting ducks.

“Take back the order to retreat. Have the entire army attack collectively, have the cavalry make a detour to a dry place and wait for the enemies.”

The trumpet sounds and the troops that were retreating were able to reform their ranks after losing to the enemies who were pursuing them. Meanwhile, the enemy is struggling in the mud and it took all their effort just to pull free one at a time, so forming ranks is impossible for them.

An order to attack was issued by each commander where arrows rained down and the spearmen formed a quilt of spears and rushes in. The cavalry who lost their ability to

move were taken out like non-resistant sacrifices. A portion of the enemy abandoned their horses and tried to fight as infantry, but when they got off their horses, they realized that they were inferior in all aspects – equipment, physique, leadership – so as expected, they were defeated one after the other.

“If possible, I’d like to go out too.”

Schwartz neighs as if stopping me. Well, he’s heavy too so he would obviously sink.

“Please restrain yourself. There is already no need for Lord Hardlett to go. They will say that you’re stealing their credit.”

You’re telling me that it’s sometimes nice to just watch from the back as a commander, but that’s boring. Although there is something I’m curious about.

“Leopolt, is there any meaning in killing all of them?”

“I think it would be better to kill them all, since they would come again if you let them run.”

“I won’t let them escape but you don’t need to kill those who can’t move anymore. What do you think about capturing them?”

Leopolt twisted his neck. If the opponent is from the Knights’ Order then we have an option to ask for ransom, but we can’t hope for that from the mountain tribe. Rather, I’m doubtful whether they even understand the concept of currency.

“Is there meaning to it?”

“Well you can see that there are women among them. Aegir-sama is probably going to thoroughly gobble them up after saving them.”

Celia cuts in and the atmosphere froze.

“That’s not it, well it’s partly true, but it’s not only that. They are skilled cavalry. So if we can possibly persuade them, then rather than turning our peasants into soldiers, I think they would make for a far greater help.”

Celia responds that it’s still because I want a woman to play with and Leopolt has gone

into thinking.

“...That’s true. They will make great soldiers, but I am unable to determine whether it’s possible to persuade them or not. I’ll give the order to capture them if possible. If we catch them and nothing becomes of it, we can just kill them then.”

Because horses can’t be used, messengers run towards each squad. I’ll just give up on the guys who got killed before the order is received, they’re just unlucky. I do hope that as few beauties are killed as possible though.



The battle in the wetlands is roughly decided, and the ones who somehow managed to escape were pursued by the awaiting spear cavalry. Since switching from killing to capturing in the middle, not all of them have been killed off, but there were many mountain tribe corpses in the quagmire. Among them, there were a few women and children too.

“It makes me sick when I see young women dead like this.”

“Those guys turned everyone into soldiers and collided with us. It’s natural for them to be defeated.”

Celia says that, but when she saw the remains of a young-looking boy, she also closed her eyes and furrowed her brows.

The soldiers are hunting for survivors right now. They pressure the living ones into surrendering and those who resist or cannot be saved were finished off with their blades.

Out of the total 1200 enemy soldiers, 500 were killed, 600 were captured and not more than 100 have escaped. On the other hand, the casualties suffered by the eastern army was more or less 100 and none of them were from the private army or the laborers. The enemy forces are completely wiped out and we are able to resume our march. The light cavalry are already confirming the whereabouts of the enemy base and are tailing the escaping soldiers.

It can be said that we won both tactically and strategically.

“But the problem is this.”

On top of it being flooded, the land has over 2000 people trampling around during the fighting. Adolph had worked hard to control flooding and the fields that he created were irreparably destroyed.

“You will be the one explaining it.”

“Understood. If there wasn’t flood control, then it would have gotten slushy after the first rain, and the plan would not have unfolded. He should also rejoice at that.”

“...No, actually I’ll do it.”

If I let him say it, it will turn into a fight without a doubt. The troublesome explanations are also the superior’s responsibility, how annoying.

I’ll be using Irijina as a body pillow to sleep tonight. She’d be fine even if I hug her tightly, and it’s quite sensual so it’s worth hugging her.

CHAPTER 68

BARBARIAN SUPPRESSION WAR ③

MOUNTAIN THUNDER

–Aegir POV–

After ensnaring a large group of barbarians in the swamp and defeating them, our army is advancing into their territory, pursuing the fleeing survivors. The trailing light cavalry were shaken off due to the speed of the enemy horses, but we know their general direction. Thinking about the scale of past attacks, the earlier battle has without a doubt dealt a fatal blow to them. It will become a battle on unfamiliar land, but we will be able to overwhelm them with numbers.

“However, I thought that when it comes to not having anything my territory was number one, but I can’t compare to this place.”

A wasteland as far as the eyes can see, although it isn’t flat ground and is bumpy while also being slightly inclined.

“If we go further east from here, we will reach the great mountain range.”

The great mountain range separates the continents running north to south and cuts into the central plains, before appearing again further ahead. The mountaintop is not a place where people can possibly ascend, and a report has said that the summit is over 10,000 m high – basically the territory of the gods.

“As expected, their main forces will not live in these mountain ranges. The mountain tribe will be living in the wasteland a little beyond these mountains.”

Leopolt is lecturing for my sake. I’m grateful, but being treated as an idiot also makes my blood boil.

This territory is barren but expansive. If they can freely run around in this area, it will be impossible to find them.

“If we have a general idea of the direction, we can manage somehow.”

Horses are indispensable in their lifestyles. They are not only used in battle, but also for hunting and for transportation, and it seems that all adults receive one horse each.

In addition, maintaining the horses require a large amount of water and fodder. The skill level of the mountain tribe is low and they even have to resort to plundering and stealing to get wagons and porcelain pots – not being able to satisfactorily make them on their own. They are unable to transport the especially important large amounts of accumulated water, so they would have to travel to the plains or another water source no matter what. Once we know the direction of a small river or pond, we would be fine.

“Ooh, so you know that much?”

Leopolt looks at me in astonishment.

Heh, things like their skill level being low and them having one horse per person, it's information that even you don't know right?

“You heard this from a barbarian woman during pillow talk didn't you?”

“Don't say anything unnecessary.”

I flick Celia's forehead. That one felt good, so it made her hold her red forehead in agony.

We could not let the prisoners of war that we captured in the earlier battle walk with us so we tied their hands and had around 100 soldiers monitor them in the village. The amount of soldiers will decrease on our end, but I think we're just about to settle things, so there's no point in being frugal with them.

Amongst them, I picked out my favorite girl and took her to bed with me, but I don't know whether the mountain tribe hasn't advanced in their skills in bed, or whether that girl was just too innocent. The girl was crying while satisfying herself over and over, and by the time I released my semen once, the number of times she has already climaxed was in double digits. Once day broke, the girl has completely become my prisoner and she told me anything that I asked.

“Regardless of the method, that is crucial information. As expected.”

I have never heard a more sarcastic ‘as expected’ as that.

“That woman, she asked me whether I was the captain’s younger sister! Not only that, when I told her that Aegir-sama already has three wives, she recommended herself to be the fourth one!!”

By the way, she said that it was normal for strong men in the mountain tribe to have several wives. However, as expected I don’t want to make a woman I just met not too long ago my wife.

“Because it’s not good, next will be my turn... I mean, if you continue to ‘eat’ women irresponsibly, you’ll get into trouble.”

It’s fun seeing Celia get so desperate all the time. But recently, it seems like she’s been influenced by Irijina and her voice is getting louder. If she knew that the people around are looking at her, she’d get really embarrassed.

If you don’t attempt to make some futile conversations or something, in this territory where there is nothing but mountains, it would be unbearably boring. I want to hurry in finding and subjugating them. I can probably see whether there is any activity in the surroundings of Rafen with nothing around here.

“A bunch of tents that look like they belong to barbarians have been discovered in the riverbed in front.”

The situation moves instantly from the reports of the advance guard.

“Spear cavalry, without engaging the enemy, surround them from the back, assume every one of those guys will ride on horses, including women and children. If you don’t circle them, they’ll escape.”

“Take the archers to the front. Those guys are bow cavalry. The long spears won’t be able to defend them all.”

Each squad remembers from experience in battle how annoying these guys are. Even though we are facing few in numbers, we don’t let our guard down and form into ranks.

“Will it turn into a battle?”

I spoke my honest feelings.

“Well, their ways of doing things are unknown.”

Leopolt also has doubts in the bottom of his heart.

The enemy noticed we were coming and hastily moved, but there are only a few weapons prepared for attack and equipment for riding with horses. At a glance, they have at most 100 people, and the rest are either elderly or children. Although we had some decrease in numbers, if you include my private army, we are close to 2000, and as expected they won't stand a chance. It's what I thought, they would surrender if I showed them our numbers.

“The spear cavalry over here has gone around to the back. They are completely surrounded.”

Celia informs us. With this, their fate is sealed.

“Do they intend to resist?”

“Apparently it seems so. Their cavalry are starting to form ranks.”

Of course, Leopolt will not allow such things. The archers start firing at them in full force before they finished forming their ranks, and most of them were defeated before they could start moving decently.

Just when I was about to finish them off by setting them on fire, one man appeared. The man is wearing a fancy costume and is shouting something in a loud voice while looking over at us. It seems that he is requesting a duel.

“A duel...”

“Don't go! The battle is already decided. Putting yourself in a dangerous situation like this is pointless!”

Celia warns me as she saw how I was going to oblige with their request.

However, it isn't meaningless. According to the information from the girl I persuaded,

they have a custom in which their leader has always been the one who is the strongest, and it is decided by a one-on-one battle. I can tell from the decorations that the man who is currently shouting is wearing, but he is probably the head of the family, or the chieftain. If I am able to defeat him, then the rest of the enemies may stop resisting and surrender to us.

“Just when I found some excellent cavalry, it would be a shame if I killed them all.”

Also, if we kill all of them here, we don't know how the ones who have already surrendered will act. There's also Carla's injuries, but because of the girl I embraced yesterday, I'll forgive them. With Celia sighing behind me, I advance forward. By no means did I only want to fight.

“You fool who defiles our sanctuary! If you are terrified of the formidable rage of this earth and these mountains, may my request be granted, and let us settle things in this sacred duel!”

“I'm not really scared of the mountains, but I accept.”

He's a man in his 40's and is an exception of the mountain tribe, as his physique is slightly small, but he appears to be a veteran warrior.

“Ooh! So we have a hero here. The mountains will also be watching. Now come at me!”

The man lets out a voice of happiness as he lets his horse run and releases an arrow.

A bow in a duel? However, they are people who fought with swords and bows in the first place, so this is normal to them. Moreover, the arrow itself is not that threatening. I can easily dodge arrows that are aimed and fired right in front of me. I brush it away with my spear and instantly close the distance.

The man sees my spear and without letting me get into a close-combat fight, backs off and tries to finish me off with his bow. He maneuvers his horse expertly and uses obstacles as shields while maintaining his distance.

But I am still able to close the distance in one breath. The reason is simple, his horse is unable to escape from Schwartz. Schwartz is different from other warhorses and his legs are thick and tough. He overturns those worthless obstacles and sprints, compensating for my average horse handling skills and chooses the shortest course

by himself.

The price that he is looking for is to have a beautiful girl take care of him and brush him. If he doesn't get that, then he's quick to sulk.

In the blink of an eye, the distance between him and I closes to 10 m, and seeing as how he can't escape, the man unsheathes his sword. He has something like a machete which is shorter than 1 m, while I have a 3 m long spear. He's using a bow too, so don't think it's unfair.

While I was mumbling to myself in my heart, I swing my spear and aim for the man's neck. He blocks desperately with his sword, but with the overwhelming difference in strength, his sword flies away and his arm bends backwards.

“-!!!”

He doesn't even have the time to scream, as the returning motion of my spear comes crashing down on his neck, sending his head flying. As expected, I wouldn't lose to a small 40 year old man when it comes to exchanging blows. Having lost its head, the body collapses and falls to the ground as the horse quietly stops.

“The chief is dead! Are you still going to fight?!”

I face the surrounding mountain people and shout. They stop moving and drop their swords and bows to the ground. The women who were about to run away also gathered around me, covering the ground.

It seems that what that girl said was correct. With this, I will now become the chief of these people. The eastern army also precisely stopped attacking because of Leopolt's orders.

The battle is over.

The barbarians... the mountain people did not get destroyed, but they were conquered.

One of the mountain people stripped the headless chief's decorations and brings them over to me. It makes me look like a real barbarian so I'm against it, but it would satisfy them so it's better to wear it. With that in mind, I stretch my hand out but, at that moment, thunder roars.

The man from the mountain tribe who knelt down in front of me and offered me the decorations was struck by lightning and was burnt to a crisp, dying instantly.

The war has not yet ended.



This is the worst feeling. That's because after attaining victory, I witnessed a human getting barbequed.

"Aegir-sama!"

Celia hastily rushes to me, but I control her with my hand. Right now there is not a single cloud in the clear sky, and if you think about it normally, lightning would not occur. I don't know what this is, but there is something clearly malicious out there, which I will not let hurt Celia.

"I won't admit it, I won't admit this!"

A voice that seems to crawl on the earth. It was not really a loud voice, but it was a voice that remains in your ear quite unpleasantly.

"A fool like you who doesn't revere the mountain doesn't deserve to be the chief. Even if the law is twisted, I will not accept this!"

An eerily decorated tent, with skulls of horses and sheep... I don't want to think of it, but there are even things that look like human bones hanging there, as a single person appears slowly from that area. Wearing a large amount of rotten cloths that could no longer be called clothes, I can not see their face, and nothing can be seen except their mouth. I can't even tell whether it's a man or woman as it approaches me slowly while dragging an old rag that is acting as a dress.

"It's fine if you can't accept it, but you can at least give us your name right?"

That thing halts for a bit, but then raises its unpleasant voice again.

"You fools. Prepare yourselves, revere me. I am the incarnation of the mountains Dorbaga, only those who desire to be punished should raise their faces! "

There was a scream, and altogether, the mountain people knelt to the ground and asks for forgiveness. Earlier, they were not kneeling as much when they knelt to me after I defeated the chief, but now it was completely different, and they were trembling as they begged for forgiveness.

Meanwhile, the eastern army soldiers naturally did not lower their heads. Perhaps that was bothering so Dorbaga shouted angrily.

“The fools who do not revere the mountain will be granted death!!”

Then, light starts glowing from the staff that was held, and a stream of light runs straight into the middle of the soldiers. It was a roaring sound several times louder than before, and several people got burnt instantly, blowing back around 10 people in the vicinity as well.

It caused a large commotion.

“A magician?!”

I have heard stories about this. They are the people who manipulate the spirits and are able to use fire, wind and other mysterious powers. It requires one to be born with talent, so they are usually protected and welcomed by nations and high nobles so it is exceedingly rare for normal people to see them.

Also there are very few of them, the information on them is ambiguous and there are many uncertainties. Some say that magic users are nothing more than a flashy jack-in-the-box, while others say that it depends on how they are used, even being able to determine the outcome in battle. The point is, even though they are all magicians, their individual differences in talent varies, and there could even be small fries who wield great destructive power.

In the past, I have heard from Lucy that most magicians can only defeat one or two people. If they can defeat several people all at once, then they’re actually quite skilled.

Being able to blow away 10 enemies from a distance, the one in front of us is without a doubt a first-class magician.

“I didn’t hear that something like this existed from that girl though.”

Maybe she was purposely not talking about it, or perhaps it was an existence that she

didn't know about. Either way, the commotion is spreading to the entire eastern army. To suppress it, we should get the commanders to immediately give orders to rain down arrows on it. The one who instantly killed 10 people is formidable, but shouldn't be able to win against 2000 opponents. However, if that happens, then there will be deaths from the mayhem, and we might have to once again abandon the mountain people who have just surrendered to us.

"There's no choice except doing it myself."

I get in my stance with my spear and signal the people around me to step away. I don't intend to protect them, but they would just get in the way if they stand beside me.

"You bastard will defy the mountains as well?!"

"I understand that you're amazing, but the battle is decided. If you become obedient, then your life will be spared."

It's not like I wanted them to surrender. I just wanted to signal the opponent to target me with their attacks.

"How nonsensical, this fool is!"

Light concentrates on the staff. I advance forward immediately, slashing at them. But the light on the staff flew at me faster, and as I tried to deflect the bundle of light,

I got blown away quite spectacularly.

"Guh...!"

From the depths of my chest, air naturally leaks out as my field of view wavers. I can't just lay here forever while I'm in the middle of fighting so I get up, but my whole body is tingling with a numb feeling.

This is the first time I feel this sensation. I thought I was able to repel it with my spear, but I guess I can't tell when it comes to magic.

"What!? After taking my magic, why have you not perished?! You bastard, are you some sort of demon?"

“You’re the more suspicious one, having some weird thing fly out of your body!”

The only thing that flies out of me is love for women. Though, when it enters their bodies, it’s a love that becomes a child.

“Is that it? Then it’s my turn next.”

I try putting strength into my hand, but the hand holding the spear feels numb and I can’t use my strength the way I want. When I look carefully, the palm of my hand is burned quite vividly. The fact that it wasn’t burnt to a crisp, may be thanks to the cloak I’m wearing.

I unsheathe the much lighter Dual Crater and charge once again. Seeing as how I’m being lectured between incantations, it seems that this light magic can’t be fired consecutively.

The distance is 20 m, but to me that distance is only a little, and it doesn’t seem like my opponent can move too quickly either. If my sword can reach, then it should be over.

“Nonsense! Be destroyed, you demonic being!”

As I approach, the light does not come flying. If that’s the case, I can do it. With that thought, I prepare to swing my sword, but the staff glows with a light different from before.

It was not the roaring sound made from the earlier thunderbolt, but it was a crackling sound like sizzling hot oil, and a wall of light appeared, encircling the magician.

“You serious, how much skill do you possess?”

The wall of light burns even the grass on the ground, so even I can tell that it would be bad if I touched it. Seeing as how our movements have stopped, the soldiers aimed their bowgun at the magician and fired their arrows, but they instantly caught on fire as they touched the wall of light, burning up and being deflected.

“If you touch this guy, then we’ll suffer a terrible fate again like earlier.”

My burned palm hurts. My cloak also has a burnt smell. If I were to lose this cloak as

well, I might cry.

“But, there is no other way than that.”

If I have a pillar of fire, then I might be able to try and oppose the magician during our confrontation, but unfortunately, I only have a sword as a weapon right now. I took my Dual Crater and get ready to swing it with both hands, exhaling a large breath. ¹

With a rough warcry, I swing down my sword. It's do or die, and I can't do anything but trust in the Nonna's symbolic treasured sword.

When the sword hits the wall of light, it was like trying to forcefully cut something soft, and there was an intense crackling sound, similar to the one that burned my body before. I don't know what will happen, but the only thing I can do is to utilize my strength and try to outmuscle the opponent.

And then I won the bet, the beautifully brilliant sword did not get repelled by the light, but instead was able to slice through the wall.

Cheers erupted from the gathered mountain people and the eastern army. After the wall had been cut, it disappeared, just like how fog would clear up.

“What the-! The blessing of the mountains, to be able to slice my sacred power, what on earth are you?!”

“I wonder!”

I don't feel like talking. I pull the sword from the wall and approach the magician. The bundle of light is once again released at point-blank range.

But it's useless, as this sword has already proven to me that it can cut through light. I will no longer get hit by your magic.

With one swing, I bisect the soaring spear of light, and launch a kick to the opponent's body. Getting knocked back in a sorry state, I step on the back of its fallen appearance and get ready to swing my sword. Sounds of two explosions resounded behind me. It seems the magic that was cut by me flew to the back. The unlucky soldiers should resent this guy, not me.

“S-stop! If you kill me, punis-! You’ll be punished! A landslide will-! An avalanche will-!”

My interest in this guy suddenly fades. This guy isn’t using the mountain or actually has anything to do with it. This guy is just a little bit of a powerful magician and has the mountain people in fear. When you destroy the magic that they are so confident in, they start panicking, and when they are about to hit the depths of death, they turn into humans who beg for their lives.

“Your skill was amazing. Later.”

Just like taking the stem off of vegetables, the head was separated from the body.

A chorus of loud cheering erupted that seemed to shake the mountains. All the soldiers of the eastern army raised both their hands and praised me.

“The strongest knight in Goldonia!”

“Even magicians don’t scare him!”

“Praise the invincible captain!”

“An incredible woman-lover!”

I’ll deal with the final guy later, so the cheers don’t make me feel bad. This time was quite dangerous though. My hand and my entire body needs treatment, and more than anything I’m worried about my cloak... it would be nice if it didn’t get burned or filled with holes.

On the other hand, the target of the mountain people’s fear died, and I remain as the only person they surrendered to, thus they end up bowing their heads around me once again.

This time, it’s really over. I declare the victory and the end of the battle to everyone, and I will have Celia, who’s running toward me with tears streaming down her face, handle my treatment.



“Gosh! It’s already gotten so bad.”

I leave the post-war processing to Leopolt and have Celia treat my injuries. My hand is in a terrible state, but besides that, there are also places where I got burned even though I was wearing armor.

“It really seems like you got struck by lightning.”

Back in my mercenary days, I had the misfortune of seeing a person get struck by lightning, and the burns look like this. Although that guy had his entire body inflamed and died instantly.

“You saw how the soldiers got burnt to a crisp right?! Why did you act so recklessly!?”

It’s because I thought I could deflect it with my spear, but Celia is not looking for that kind of answer.

“My bad. I made you worry.”

I hug the teary-eyed Celia and tell her gently. For Celia, who has grown up, this is the right answer.

Incidentally, because I’m having ointment plastered over me, Irijina is forbidden to come in. And about the important cloak...

“It’s pretty burnt and there are a few holes here and there. I think it’s better to get a new one.”

“...”

“Aegir-sama? It would need a material that I’ve never seen before in order for it to be re sewn, so why not throw it away?”

“Celia, don’t say anymore than that.”

My voice came out harsher than I thought. The hand that was spreading the ointment over me stopped.

“W-well, I’m terribly... sorry.”

Celia turns pale. Even though she’s treating me, I did something bad, although I won’t allow this. To throw away this cloak, it’s something ridiculous for me. Once again, I pet the teary-eyed Celia as I sniff the cloak’s scent. It feels like I can smell the nostalgic scent of that wasteland among the burnt smells.



“How are the mountain people doing?”

“They have calmed down. There doesn’t look to be anybody who wants to escape.”

Leopolt tells me about what is going on after the war is over.

The mountain people decide their chief through duels every time, so after I killed the previous chief, nothing out of the ordinary happened, and it doesn’t seem like they hold a grudge against me either. But the troublesome thing is their system of government.

They treat the chief as the absolute existence and will follow his every order, and from that, the other various leaders move accordingly. In other words, it is a centralized authoritarian system. The one other person, besides the chief, who can voice their opinion is the shaman, but was killed by me so there is no other corresponding person.

After becoming their chief, if I don’t give them any instructions, they won’t be able to decide anything by themselves and they can’t do anything.

The one who has taught me that is the girl who is sitting beside me. Her name is Pipi, and is the daughter of the previous chief, but he had about 20 wives and she is just one of the children so there wasn’t really any emotional attachment.

“So, is Pipi going to cooperate with me?”

“It’s natural for me to cooperate with the chief. I’ll do anything. I will follow the chief wherever you go.”

She has a succinct way of speaking which contains no hesitation. It’s the first time that

someone from the plains people (seems like that's what they call anyone not from the mountain tribe) became the chief, so they need to try and understand us. At the same time, they want to earn my favor as the mountain people value strength, and has seen me slice the previous chief in half and acknowledged me to be a great man.

Therefore, they offered a tribute that would make any man happy, in other words, it seems they decided that they would present a beautiful lady to me. She's pretty, and Pipi is quite young, but this is what I heard from her.

"I heard that it is a man's pleasure to dye a girl around the same age as Pipi with their own color."²

"Pipi's body is small so it's easy for men to dominate. Men get excited when they dominate women."

Our cultures are quite different from each other. Although I don't dislike that.

In any case, we have little information about the mountain people, and if Pipi is willing to come to me, it'll be easy for me to rule over them, so I'll accept this deal without hesitation.

"So what should we do about the ones who left?"³

Pipi's expression gets dark.

"I don't know. Most of the ones who went to the plains never came back. It would be difficult to continue hunting like this. We could make lots of babies to increase our numbers, and then we would have to cull the ones who can't hunt and the weak ones."

It is certainly the case that if they already have few people and we take away over 1000 healthy people from their population, it would be a crisis situation. But the survivors of the mountain people will be treated as prisoners of war.

"About that, could you say something to the leaders of the tribe? Please tell them, about half of the ones who won't return have been captured but not killed. If they swear loyalty to me, I'll let the prisoners return."

Pipi's eyes open wide.

“If half of them come back, we would be fine! As expected of the great chief, I will let the leaders know!”

The way she runs off is still childish and adorable. It feels like she’s a cute little girl.

“...”

Celia is looking at me with an indescribable face. She might be wary that her standing might be taken away from her.

“Don’t be so cautious. You are my cute Celia.”

Celia’s face relaxes suddenly.

“Chief! The leaders said they will gladly pledge their allegiance. And also, three women is too little for the great chief to have. They said it’s fine if you want to choose 20 and take them with you.”

Celia’s expression became tense.



The battle between the mountain people ended with them being taken over by me. In their culture, things like contracts or treaties don’t exist, since they don’t have paper in the first place. The leaders just knelt down in front of me where the mountains could see them and pledged their allegiance. This will act as the ritual of allegiance.

I promise to release the prisoners of war and I take their negotiator/tribute, Pipi, back to Rafen.

“You just can’t. You’re still small so you can’t be embraced.”

“Why not? Pipi is already a woman. I want the child of the great chief.”

“You’re saying this without having seen Aegir-sama’s thing! It’s impossible with that small body of yours.”

“What haven’t I seen?”

“Hm? Well, isn’t it ‘that’? Hardlett-dono’s big dic-, ouch!”

I hit Irijina’s head to shut her up. She acts as the negotiator, but the number of girls increased again.

“Uuu, the number of women increased again. What should I say to Nonna and the others...”

“It’s fine isn’t it? Pipi is like the emissary.”

Celia isn’t convinced by that either.

“No! You’ll be eaten immediately for sure. And also, there were two unknown women on the floor yesterday, right!? And there were two red stains on the sheets, right!?”⁴

That can’t be helped. The leader of the tribe said that he wanted two of his own daughters to receive the seed of the great one. And they were also pretty, so I couldn’t refuse.

I hold down the fussy Celia and dodge the questions asked by the probing Irijina. The burnt cloak, and the broken spear⁵ – they make up the wounded gifts that Lucy left me, and I feel like this moment will gradually increase in importance later.

Protagonist: Aegir Hardlett. 20 years old. Spring

(Traditional age reckoning)

Status: Goldonia Kingdom Viscount. Eastern Independent Army Commander. Troop Count: 1900

Feudal Lord of Arkland Southeast Area. Private Army: 120

Assets: 5050 gold (5000 gold Debt)

Weapons: Dual Crater (large sword), Large spear

Equipment: Black Cloak, Gold Armor (lol)

Family: Nonna (wife), Carla (concubine), Mel (concubine), Sue (daughter), Kuu, Ruu, Rita (imitation maid), Sebastian (butler)

Capital: Melissa, Maria, Miti, Alma, Kroll, Catherine

Subordinates: Celia (adjutant), Irijina (private army commander), Pipi (mountain nation),

Leopolt (Independent Army Vice-Commander), Adolph (domestic affairs official), Schwartz (horse)

Sexual Partners: 44, children who have been born: 6

CHAPTER 69

AFTER THE WAR WITH THE MOUNTAIN NATION

–Aegir POV–

I take Pipi along with me as I return to Rafen. As long as there is no war, the distance between the mountain nation territory and Rafen is not too far. Pipi boastfully tells me that if the horses are good, then she would prove to me that it wouldn't even take two days to arrive.

And as expected it did not take two days, as the army returned to Rafen and everything went back to being peaceful. I tell the eagerly awaiting Adolph the results of what happened.

I told him that I didn't simply kill all the mountain nation, but put them under my control, and at the very least, as long as I'm alive, there won't be any attacks from them, so he can rest assured. Also, I added at the end that I kind of destroyed the entirety of one of the cultivation areas.



"I see, then the mountain nation can't even make their own pottery or wagons?"

"That's right. So sometimes they steal... from the plains people here. That's the only way they can obtain them. But, they won't anymore."

The only ones here are Irijina, Pipi, myself, and also Adolph and Leopolt. Adolph will talk to Pipi about the mountain nation's industry and commerce so I let them chat but...

"A 30 something man is going to talk to a child about domestic affairs?"

Leopolt has said what I was going to say. But the concerned parties seem to be serious about it.

"So what do you do about weapons and armor?"

“We use the skin of dead horses or the sheep we eat as armor. We steal weapons, or we trade them for food.”

“And who are you trading with?”

“Hmm. In the mountains, there is the fire nation. If we exchange food or livestock, they give us iron weapons.”

Adolph whispers to me as I was fooling around with Irijina beside him.

“This is important information.”

To me, things like bartering for weapons doesn't matter to me.

“Their weapons – arrowheads and swords – are of poor quality, but they are iron nonetheless. In other words, in a place unknown to us somewhere in the mountain nation territory, there is a place that is making iron products.”

Well that's good and all, but so what? There are blacksmiths in every town, and even Rafen has two of them. Even though the mountain nation are behind us in technology, it's not like they use anything particularly strange.

“Aaah geez, this is why I hate soldiers! Listen here okay? You can find the blacksmiths that make iron into weapons anywhere. But we are trading with them. In other words, they are supplying their own iron ore.”

I see, which means there is an iron mine inside their territory somewhere.

“Pipi, do you know about any iron mines? It's the place where the stones used to make iron products originate.”

“Don't know. But chief, iron is iron. It's not a stone.”

Indeed, you know absolutely nothing.

“In any case, there is definitely an iron mine. This area is also outside of the trade route, so if we want to transport the iron, then we will have to incur some costs. It would be convenient if we can supply our own iron.”

“I will leave that part to you, so do as you like. There is something even more important, though.”

The important thing is the improvement of the mountain nation’s food situation and the inclusion of their army. They are primarily hunters and nomads. If the climate changes, their prey will also reduce drastically, and if the grass dies at their destination, then the livestock they brought along with them will also die. According to Pipi, that’s the cause of the food shortage – which isn’t rare at all – and during famine, they would often thin out the people. And the person who chose who was going to be culled is that shaman.¹ So those extremely distasteful decorations were actual human bones...

If we feed them from here, they will not have to hunt everyday anymore, and if they have extra people, they can be included in my private army. Their equestrian archery should be second to none among those in the central plains. At the very least, I have never seen another person who could accurately snipe targets to the side or the back while riding on horses.

It seems like if they’re an adult, anyone is able to do it, proven by the fact that Carla got shot. If you replace their crude bows with our weapons, their power will increase even further.

By the way, there was somewhat of a dispute when Carla and Pipi first met each other – Carla spotted Pipi doing her business out in the open field because she didn’t understand the meaning of a toilet, and felt sympathy for her, so she lost her confrontational attitude. Quickly, Pipi was disciplined strictly by Nonna and she was made to use the toilet.

“That is fine but actually, the food recently, especially the grain, has risen to an unbelievably high price.... and as expected, it will be tough on our wallets to offer food to over 1500 mountain people free of charge. In the form of trade, I’d like to convert as much as possible of what we obtain into money.”

Adolph cuts in. It’s certainly true that Claudia has giv-... lent me some gold, but I won’t be able to continuously support everyone. In the unlikely event that I use up all the money and have to pester her for cash, I’d be kept² in White City as a side-lover by her for sure this time. However, we know the skill level of the mountain nation, so if we trade off the hunted prey and livestock, and our food supply diminishes, we would be

getting our priorities backwards.

“Well, there are always extras around Pipi, so it shouldn’t be a problem giving some away, is there?”

“We don’t need them. We don’t need those incompetent people who can’t hunt.”

I don’t really intend to dirty my hands by participating in slave trade.

“Besides that. Maybe like some other things, or tools.”

“...horses.”

“Aren’t horses necessities?”

“The naturally small horses, the struggling horses can’t be ridden so they’re useless.”

I see, they don’t use wagons that are pulled by horses, so they use the inefficient method of having the horses carry their luggage. As a result, there is not much use for the horses they can’t ride. Also they are familiar with the breeding of horses, so we can have them give birth to a large amount of horses. Naturally, the number of unrideable horses will also increase.

“Those kinds of horses will become meat. They are relatively delicious.”

What a sad fate for them.

“That’s quite the waste. Even the unrideable horses can be used to pull wagons, and also for farming, so they have enough importance.”

“Pipi, if you give us those horses in exchange for food, do you think the leaders will accept that?”

The girl turns her head in a cute fashion. When I see her in this state, it makes me want to prank her, but I should hold back.

“No one will object. It’s wonderful to obtain something we want for something we don’t need.”

“Then let’s trade your horses for our food. Horses have many uses, since we can immediately use them in our territory, or we could sell them quickly in the capital. I will let Adolph think about the detailed ratios, but our goal is to at least be able to grant them some leeway in terms of supplies. Don’t be so stingy with the ratio, got it?”

“I understand.”

“Afterwards, we would need a highway from the mountains to Rafen in order to make trading go smoothly. If possible, I would like the manual labor to be offered to the mountain nation too...”

“That would probably be impossible.”

Their physical stature isn’t naturally large. They are not that proficient in simple labor that requires pure strength either. And there is also another problem.

“Pipi, do you know about this?”

I show her a hammer.

“A blunt weapon. You use it to hit prey so that you can defeat them without spilling blood.”

I show her a brick.

“A stone. It looks fragile.”

I point to a wheelbarrow.

“???”

So that’s the state of things.

“Are you going to educate them like this while having them do construction?”

“Hey hey, I’ll teach...”

Adolph doesn’t seem like he’s giving up. Whether it’s a blessing or a curse, an unexpectedly large amount of people flowed into our territory. So much so that we

don't have to worry too much about the labor force.

"Chief."

Pipi pulls on my sleeve.

"We swore that we would follow the chief. The food and the trading don't matter. If needed, you can take the entire tribe with you to fight."

I pat her to show my thanks. Unlike Celia, Pipi likes being stroked from her nape to her back instead of her head. It seems like it makes her tingle and feel good. She has an awfully erotic expression and it's gotten me a little erect.

"Then let's split them up into groups of about 200 people and have them come. Even though they are superior in their archery and horse-riding skills, if they can't cooperate with the army, we can't use them, since we need them to line up with our own archers and horses. "

Leopolt speaks as he noticed that the subject is heading in the direction regarding the army, but Pipi doesn't respond.

"You aren't the chief. You're just one of the plains people. Pipi and the others obey the chief only."

I feel like I saw this reaction somewhere before. She is similar to someone who is unusually not here right now. I don't have a head to pat so it's a bit lonely, but I'll pat Pipi instead.

It's hard to call it a conference, but in this rather liberal conversation, we decided on conducting an expedition to search for the iron mine, the enforcement of trade, and the regular army training. In regards to the search for the iron mine, light cavalry have already been dispatched, and for the other two, Pipi will be sent as an emissary. And the person who has been snoring in the middle of it, will get a lemon stuffed in their mouth.

"Nmooou-!! Sour! What is that?!"

Everything has been decided and everyone starts to move. I drink the tea that Sebastian made as I stroke Rita's ass. While listening to the woman's joyful moans, I

realized that something was nagging me in my head. I feel like I've made a promise to a woman, or I haven't made one.

I try to remember, but there are a bunch of girls that pop in my head that I've promised to 'embrace them next time' or 'I'll come see you again when I have time', and I can't seem to remember the correct person. In the end, I gave up trying to remember, and pull Rita into bed. It's still daytime, but the fighting will be soon so it's fine if I indulge for a bit.

"We're going to bed."

"I will be glad to service you."

I pull her hand and head to my room, but on the way, I found Nonna.

"Ara, Aegir-sama, have you finished talking?... you're going to have a woman while the sun is still up high?"

It's the perfect timing, so I'll have Nonna come with us too.

"Eeh? I was just going to have tea or something... uuu, I guess I can't help it. Since a wife's duty takes priority above all."

There's no point in trying to think of the woman whose name doesn't pop up either. Let's enjoy ourselves plenty.



As we enter the room, Nonna and Rita stand alongside each other and look at my face.

"Nonna will strip, Rita take off only your underwear."

"Yes."

"Oh my~, I understand."

Nonna unleashes her dangerous breasts, and coupled with her slender body, she shows off an unbalanced eroticness. On the other hand, Rita faces her ass in my direction, rolling up her modified apron-dress shortened above her knees, and

lowering her underwear in such a way to purposely show me her genitals.

“Please relax. I’ll take it off now.”

Rita takes off my clothes. She isn’t just taking it off though, she brushes against my neck and my chest purposely in order to increase my arousal. After dropping my underwear, and seeing my cock pop out, she envelops the tip in her mouth without delay. But Nonna told her to wait.

“Rita-san! I also wanted... to do that!”

Ever since the time where I spanked her ass, the times Nonna has asserted herself as the wife has decreased, but even so, she couldn’t accept the fact that my own wife will be forced to wait her turn.

Rita makes slurping sounds as she licks the cock already wet with saliva and answers.

“Madam, please whisper your words of love to Hardlett-sama, and enjoy your wonderful love. I will take care of the lewd and lustful bottom half...”

After saying so, she once again takes my cock and fills her mouth, bobbing her head up and down.

“Aegir-samaa~”

Nonna comes over and kisses me while standing, as I stroke her hair.

“You’re always so beautiful everyday.”

“It is thanks to the love that Aegir-sama has shown me. When a woman is loved, she becomes that much more beautiful.”

“Nn-! Nn-! Nn-! Nnboh-!”³

I hold her shoulder and stroke her gently.

“What beautiful skin. It’s like silk.”

“I take care of it everyday. It’s so that you can say something like that...”

“Nnmo-! Nnbo-! Nngh-! Nnn—!!”

A sweet scene from the likes of a love drama was playing on the top half, but Rita is crouching at my feet and making obscene noises. Nonna is pretending not to see it, but it seems that she’s reaching her limit.

“Hey! How do you think I can whisper my words of love if you’re making those slurping sounds?!!”

“Puhha-! Please pay it no attention.”

“Of course I won’t!”

I laugh without thinking.

“Get on the bed, I’ll make love to you.”

““Yes!””

Rita immediately gets on the bed but Nonna doesn’t move.

“Um...”

That’s right, let’s do that thing that Nonna loves. I turn her back and her legs with my hands and lift her up while hugging her sideways. Then I take her like that and throw her onto the bed.

“Ahn♪”

Falling with a thud onto the bed, Nonna leaks a joyful sounding scream. If I do that, it seems that it gets her in the mood to be fucked starting now. Rita is looking on jealously. I could do it to you too, but first you’ll have to satisfy my cock that you have gotten erect with your earlier service.

“I’m counting on you.”

I also get on the bed and my hard dick is thrust in front of the two already there. This time, without hesitation, Nonna also puts her mouth on it.

“Nn Nn Nn-! Today you’re quite splendid too...”

“Nmo-! Nnn~! It’s so hard, like steel...”

Nonna licks the rod and Rita envelops the tip and sucks on it. As I thought, having the both of them service me with their mouths is unbearable. I’ll need to switch people around and test out different combinations with everyone. My dreams are getting bigger.

“Haa... Haa...”

It seems like Rita, who declared her love for large cocks, is reaching the limits of her aroused state from my cock, which is larger than usual.

“Madam, please. Please let me taste this first. If this goes on, I’ll go crazy.”

“Muu, I’m also... no, well it can’t be helped.”

The bed has already gotten really wet from the dripping juices coming from Rita’s crotch, hidden by her apron-dress. It seems that it’s true that her arousal is at its limit.

“Thank you very much. Hardlett-samaa~”

It would be fun to tease her here, but I also have to thank her for the rich service earlier, so I’ll just let her put it in.

“Alright, you can get on. Nonna, could you let me rest on your lap?”

“Aaah, I’m so happy! I can finally get this huge dick... OOooo!!”

Rita couldn’t wait for Nonna to get in lap-pillow position under me and she practically jumped on top of me. My cock instantly enters her deepest part and spreads her apart.

“Huge cock hurts! It’s good! Huge cock is good!”

She winces from the pain but immediately moves her waist and shakes her hips, making the bed creak. She’s still clothed while we’re having sex, so combined with the movements of her hips, I can only see small glimpses here and there of the part where

we're connected, and it's quite the treat. It's too bad I can't see her jiggling boobs, but just when I thought about it and looked there, Rita saw where my gaze was and unbuttoned her chest area. Just having her breasts exposed and jiggling while still clothed is quite a lewd sight.

"Rita-san – she practically looks like a sex beast."

I have Nonna rest my head on her lap-pillow and when I try to look at her face, it was covered by her breasts.

"..."

"Yes, you want these don't you?"

Nonna leans over and her breasts were pressed against my face. As expected, I enjoy the taste of the marshmallow softness.

"Incredibleeee! It's getting even bigger!"

Rita's scream accurately described the current situation.

"Ara, I'm happy that you are satisfied."

I can't see Nonna's face, but I can tell that she's smiling with a satisfied look.

"Rita, turn to the other side and face your ass this way."

Rita quickly changes her posture and shakes her large ass in front of me.

"You really have such a large ass. You're not even fat, so why do you have such a large ass?"

Rita's ass is extremely large compared to her stature. It's like her ass is chubby and stuffed with meat as if it was dedicated for men.

I grin broadly and face Nonna... I can't see her face so I actually just face towards her breasts. I'll have her suck on two of my fingers.

"Nnph-, how do you like it?"

“I’ll do this.”

Rita is shaking her hips while moaning as I place my hand on her ass, and touch the small bud slightly above her hole, which is completely filled by me.

“Hyaa-! Hardlett-sama!”

“Eeh!?”

I push my fingers all the way into her without hesitation and not only Rita, but Nonna also leaks her voice.

“Aaah! Your fingers, they’ll get dirty!”

“Aegir-sama, doing something so mean...”

Mean? What is mean about it? Rita turns back to face Nonna.

“Fingers in my asshole, it feels so gooodddd!!”

“Eeeh!?”

When I move my fingers inside her ass, she starts to convulse.

“So good! My ass hole feels good! But it’s not enough... your cock, slam your huge cock in my ass please!”

“Don’t be ridiculous, I have to do Nonna after. You’ll have to endure it!”

I add another finger to spread open her ass and Rita springs up.

“Aaah—-!! My ass is burninggggg!!”

Rita clenches and collapses to the front. It seems that she climaxed from her asshole.

“No way... she came from her ass, unbelievable.”

I pull out from Rita and roll her to the corner of the bed, getting on top of Nonna. I

haven't cum yet so my hardness and size are still at its peak condition. I plop my cock on top of Nonna's white stomach.

"Sorry to keep you waiting, now let's start. So which do you want? Your ass?"

"If-if this thing entered my ass, I'd die!"

I smile at Nonna, who's resisting me seriously, and just penetrate her from the front and swing my hips. Nonna is agonizing in relief, and is getting pleased sweetly.

"When you are about to release your seed, can you thrust it deep inside?"

"I don't mind, but how come?"

"The feeling of having your seed expand my womb is unexpectedly comforting..."

For Nonna's delicate body, it's not like I can shove my entire thing up to the root, and if I adjust too much, it'll be too shallow and much of the seed will spill out. It seems that she wants me to send it precisely into her womb.

"Then spread your legs really wide. Don't worry about how you look, just give it your all."

"Like this perhaps?"

Nonna spreads her legs gaping wide, unthinkable to her usual elegant gestures. That further excites me, and my cock twitches, even after it got pleasure accumulated by Rita.

"Ah-! Please go ahead!"

Nonna places her hands on my face as if hanging onto me and prepares herself to receive my ejaculation. But something interrupted.

"The pleasure from the ass hole, can be felt not only by women... please enjoy it to your heart's content."

Rita whispers in a engrossed voice, and inserts several fingers into my ass as I thrust into Nonna.

“Guaaa!!”

“Eeh! Wai-! It’s swelling-! Kyaaaa!!”

Nearing my ejaculation, the stimulation caused me to climax intensely, and I released a large amount of semen, more than expected. In addition, my cock expanded even further, pushing the limits. Nonna’s hole is spread wide by the extremely thick cock, and the momentum of the ejaculation was enough to cause the sound of the squirting and then hitting her insides to echo throughout the whole room.

“Ggh! It won’t stop! Nonna!!”

The ejaculation continued vigorously as if it would never end, and Nonna moaned loudly as the large amount of seed flowed into her, grasping the pillow due to reflex. Since she spread her legs so wide, her womb could not escape the rushing stream of semen.

“Incredible... I can tell from his asshole that it’s spouting like a fountain too.”

Rita continues to dig my asshole with her fingers without hesitation. It’s been awhile since I’ve felt such pleasure that my vision is going white.

“Aaaaaaah.....”

Nonna fainted from the overly enlarged cock and ejaculation and is no longer moving. But even so she looks beautiful in her unconscious state and her half-opened eyes.

“Haa, haa, haa.”

The ejaculation that I didn’t think was going to stop, finally ended, and I pulled my cock out out Nonna. A large amount of semen flowed back out and flooded the bed.

“How was it?... um, your face is scary. Did I make a mistake or?”

I’ll have to avenge Nonna. I take Rita and embrace her from the front, pushing her all the way to the wall, thrusting up into her while still standing. I grab one of her legs and lift her up by the thigh, while leaving her standing on one foot, as I swing my hips. I wanted to do this at least once with a maid, but this is a battle of revenge. Having sex

while standing, Rita's hips seem ready to give out and her weight causes my cock to sink deeper into her. If she faints, then it might even reach all the way to her womb. Maybe she knew or she didn't, but Rita continues to move her hips happily.

In the end, the first thing Nonna saw after being knocked unconscious, was the scene of a maid screaming 'forgive me, master'.



-Third Person /Yoguri POV-

At the same time, Former Arkland Northern Area, Goldonian Government Zone

"Today, I heard the daughter of the Mulney house has sold herself."

"It can't be helped. There are like five kids over there. It's pretty much impossible to survive."

The daughter from the house of so-and-so got sold. The husband abandoned the field to work in a mine.

It has become a familiar story. That is natural, since the tax rate has made things impossible. The tax rate itself has certainly become lighter than that in the Arkland days. But, the price paid for that is that the war caused the fields to become destroyed, and the accessories manufactured in the side job won't sell, since better quality products are imported from Goldonia at a lower price.

In the end, the lifestyle hasn't changed much from the rule of Arkland. Even though it has gotten a little bit better, it's not like things are good now just because it was the absolute worst back then.

There is certainly hope for the future. From now on, the fields will be prepared, and the population will stabilize. Even so, in order to continue living, the daughters have to be sold to brothels, and the men have to risk their lives by working in the mines. If we wanted to stay overnight as travelers, we would still need to have the wife and daughters sleep with others to earn the precious money to do so.

This isn't how it's supposed to be! We fought the kingdom of Arkland as the volunteer army. Many villagers perished, but even so, we continued to fight for the sake of a new

age. I even got the commitment of the noble who saved our village and led the army. I have heard that it was better under the rule of the Treia kingdom, but in this situation it's hard to believe they will give us a favorable treatment.

When I ask around, it seems that the noble is now the hero of the war and was given territory. According to the circulating rumors, that noble has extremely low taxes in the lands of the remote region and has a good government, the citizens flowing in from the vicinity are also ushered in with open arms, and they are given a place to live.

Before doing something like that, don't you have some promises that you have to fulfill?!

"Dad, I'll be going out for a bit."

I've had enough of just waiting patiently.

"No way, going to complain directly to the noble, you'll get punished. Why don't you write a letter and peacefully..."

Dad, it's because you're like that, that this isn't working out. Even if I send out a letter, it will get crushed by the subordinates before it reaches his eyes. If he's a narrow-minded man who would punish the female acquaintances who goes to complain to him, then what a joke of a noble he is.

"No, I'm going. It was my idea for them to cooperate with us in the first place. I will definitely bring back results."

I am no longer listening to my father's opinions as I grab some valuable food, pack them in the bag and load them on a horse. It was a small and worthless horse, but it can probably carry a single girl like me.

"If I don't return, or if I come back as a corpse, then the rumors of that hero are nothing but lies, in the end, he's just a narrow-minded noble, and is laughable."

Even if I have to face dangers, if I don't speak to him face-to-face, I can't settle down.

"Heey, don't be so reckless for the sake of the village, Yoguri!"

I ignore my father's voice as I continue riding my horse.

If by any chance that he's forgotten, I'll slap some sense into him. That Viscount Aegir Hardlett!

Protagonist: Aegir Hardlett. 20 years old. Summer

(Traditional age reckoning)

Status: Goldonia Kingdom Viscount. Eastern Independent Army Commander. Troop Count 2000

Feudal Lord of Arkland Southeast Area. Private Army 150

Assets: 5020 gold (5000 gold Debt)

Weapons: Dual Crater (large sword), Large spear

Equipment: Black Cloak, Gold Armor (lol)

Family: Nonna (wife), Carla (concubine), Mel (concubine), Sue (daughter), Kuu, Ruu, Rita (imitation maid), Sebastian (butler)

Capital: Melissa, Maria, Miti, Alma, Kroll, Catherine

Subordinates: Celia (adjutant), Irijina (private army commander), Pipi (mountain nation emissary), Leopolt (Independent Army Vice-Commander), Adolph (domestic affairs official), Schwartz (horse)

Sexual Partners: 44, children who have been born: 6



PDF BY: TRAITORAIZEN